James the Fatalist and His Master

by Denis Diderot

Free public domain classic — Noveliopdf

012850. A fd. JAMES THE FATALIST AND HIS MASTER. . VOL. I.

JAMES THE FATALIST AND, HIS MASTER. TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH OF DIDEROT. kk IN THREE VOLUMES, VOL. L LONDON : PRINTED FOR G, G, AND J, ROBINSON, PATER-NOSTER-ROW. 1797.

MEMORY). DIDEROT. O DIDEROT! how many days have already elapsed , since thy. genius has " been extinguished, since the obscurity of the tomb has shaded thy. lifeless ° ashes! And of all the friends to whomn thy nights were consecrated, on whom _ were lavished the stores of thy talents and the riches of thy imagination, none has yet: attempted to rear to thee a monument worthy of the gratitude due VOL. I. B | from

it TO THE MEMORY from friendship, from thy own age and from future times ! Yet where is the man of letters whose panegyric can be more interesting to be transmitted to posterity! It is true - that Diderot made no discovery which has extended the sphere of our knowIedge; perhaps he has left bebind him _ no work which can place him in the rank-of our orators, our philosophers, our poets 5 but I dare Appeal to those, who with abilities to appreciate his merit, had the happiness. ‘Of his ace 2 qaaintance, whether he nevertheless was hot ‘one ‘of ‘the most astonishing phieno: Wena of the powet of wit and of ge ‘hits? ar: © Ye théte ste’ men‘ of whoth the hoe Wour of the harman mind ‘is concetved P ae ate a in

~ OF DIDEROT. Hit in preserving a faithful remembrance, - they are those who possessed real claims _ to public esteem and admiration, but whiom particular cifcumstances, I know‘ not what fatality attacheil to their destiny, never permitted to develope all the force, all the extent of their faculties. What eulogium of Virgil could add more to the idea of him than the Enid i inspires? What panegyric of Racine

could give a stronger concep-. tion of his genius than the Phaedra or Athalia exhibits? But how many sages -are there equally honoured in the ages in which they lived and by which they were followed, whose memory must: have perished had it not been preserved by the homage of their cotemporaries. . ~ It is not thy eulogium, O Diderot, that I can venture to undertake.— BQ Scarcely

iv TO- THE- MEMORY Scarcely dare I flatfer myself that my feeble talents can here. collect a few . __ wreaths werthy to deck thy funeral urn; but I too, often experienced the. happiness of being admitted to the modest asylum in which thou wert concealed; I'too, liave often shared the precious gifts which thy genius diffused, around thee with a profusion so easy and: so generous, with a warmth so sweet and so interesting. My gratitude shall not rest upon vain panegyrics, but at least I shall attempt to express what.I have. seen, what I have felt; and those of ‘thy friends who shall behold this feeble sketch will perhaps find in it some features of thy pictures eee with fidelity. -The artist who wished to find a snodel for the head of Aristotle, or of Plato,

OF DIDEROT. - eo Plato would have scarcely met with a. modern head more worthy of his'studies than that. of the late Diderot. _ His brow large, open and gently rounded, bore’ the imposing image, of ‘a mind, vast; luminous and fertile. Our great physiognomist Lavater imagined that he discovered in it the traces of ‘a chatadter timid: and of little: enterprise-; and ‘this conclusion, formed solely.upon tlie: portraits which he may have seen of lim, has always appeared to us to be the opinion of a very'nice observer. His nose. possessed a masculine beauty ; ; the contour of his upper eye-lid was: full of delicacy ; ‘the usual expression of his eyes sensible and sweet ; but. ‘when’liis: mind -began to be. animated and ‘warmed they seemed to sparkle swith: fire; his mouth ,breathed: an inferesting ‘mixture. of. archness, grace 3 B3- - and”

vi TO THE MEMQRY and good nature. Whatever vacuity _ he might in other

respects have in his mien, there was naturally in the cast of his head, and particularly when he _ spoke with ation, a great deal 6f nobleness, force and dignity. It seeméd that enthusiasm was become the natural turn of expression of his voice, of his foul, and of all his faculties, In a cold and tranquil state of mind sometimes might be discovered, constraint, awk~ wardness, timidity, even a kind of affectation. Till his thoughts had transported him beyond his ordinary feel ings he was not himself, he was BOE _ Diderot. In order to form some idea of the extent and the fertility of - his mind, it is not sufficient to cast: a _Tapid glance, I will not say: over every thing

Qe DIDERGT..- Yuk _ thing which he has done, but over every thing which the ie knows of him. * | v * We have not spoken of his first essays, the translation of Lord Shaftsbury's treatise-of- Mort . and Virtue, that of the "History. of Greece: . by 'Stanyan, the DiGionary of Medicine, &e. &e; We shall only here advert tq one part of his works which he. has left in. manuscript. . His James the Fatalist and his Religjeuse, ave. "two 'yomanees ; the first of which presents a great variety of traits and of 'ideas at once simple, new and original ; the other jsa grand pidure, full of sou) and. passion, of the most lively strokes, and the moral tendency of which is the 'more striking from the' extreme. address which the author has employed to conceal 'it : .in-the end it turns out to be a mast severe satire-apon the licentiousness of the monastic life ; and ip the whole course of 'the work there is not one word which seems to he direéted immieditely to ahis object. His Supplement to the Voyage of MM. de. Bougainville, bis Conversations upon the Origin Ff. ee and several other dialogues. « of.a. moral, ee B44. and t

Vill TO THE MEMORY The same man who conceived: the Project of the most beautiful monu and metaphysical natore shew with what ability he could combine the most abstract discussions with all the charms of the most lively and brilliant imagination. The speech of the chief of | the Otaheitans in the Supplement to the Voyage of BM. de Bougainville is one of the most beautiful pieces of savage eloquence which exists in any language. The-Plan of a New University which he

was desired to make out. by the Empress of Russia atid his reflexions upon thé: last work of M. Helvetins are of all his writings those perhaps in which there are to be found most method and reasoning ; he has displayed in these, ‘particularly in the former, vast knowledge and - ‘Jearning. His Salons or his criticisms on va; ‘vious piGtures in the Louvre-will certainly not prove éatisfa@tory to the greatest part of artists; ~ but who has ever spoken of the arts and of real -talents with a more tender sensibility or with a ‘more sublime enthusiasm? ‘and notwithstand‘ing-a number of judgments which can only wae EN; have

OF DIDEROT. ix ment which any age ‘has ever raised to ‘the glory, and for the instrudtion of — mankind, who executed a great part of _it himself, has composed two theatrical. pieces quite of an original ‘kind, and which the chastesttaste cannot dispute to be great dramatic efforts, in a style full of ‘animation and passion; the same ‘man to whom we owe so many subtle — metaphysical -essays in his Letters upon the Blind; the Deaf, and the Dumb, in his Philosophical Thoughts, in his Inter~ pretation of Nature, in the number of articles which he has furnished for the Enyclopédie, -upon the Histery of An- . ‘cient Philosophy, has given a more clear, ‘exact, and detailed description than any have been di@ated hy an inflamed and prejudiced imaginatjon, we find the work replete with original’ views,’ and with observations equally juste, acute, and:profound { . : A ; that

i : TO THE MEMORY - that we were in possession of beéfore, of all our arts and professions. There is no person certainly who does not know the perfection to which this sort of labour has since arrived ; but can we forget that before Diderot there was not one page written upon the subject wore thy of being read? The same man who has left us'so many works replete with knowledge, philosophy, and learning ; besides a collection of mathematical performances, which I have often heard quoted with praise by our first geometricians, has also composed stories and romances; he has written one in partiacular full of originality, of fancy, and of ludicrous incident ;- and it was with one of the best books upon morality extant in our language, his

Essay upon the Reigns of Claudius and Nero, that. he usefully terminated his literary career. : If

OF DIDEROT; xt. _ If we consider that so many works, and works of such a different nature are the produdtions of a single individual, who devoted to their composition only, the time which he could spare from that which was necessarily spent in procuring his own subsistence, and that of his family, or those moments which were left him by the importunity of strangers, the indiscretion of friends, and above all by the extreme indolence of his temper, we must confess that there are few ‘persons indeed with so capacious 4 . mind, or with a more extraordinary and a more copious facility of talent *, * The eloquent Apology of the Abbé de Prades, one of the best polemical performances which has appeared this century, was the work of a few days; the sublime Eulogy of Richardson was the produétion of a morning ; and he scarcely spent a fortnight in writing the Bijoux Indiscrets. : .. The

xii TO THE MEMORY The genius of Diderot resembles those sons of a family who, from being born and reared in the lap of plenty, suppose that the source of their wealth is inexhaustible; and of consequence affix no bounds to their caprices, and establish no order in their expences. To what degree of superiority might not this genius have arrived, had it been properly cultivated; or to what enter' p¥ise micht not its powers have been (3) adequate, had they been directed exclusively to one obje&; had the time and the exertions, which were prodi_ gally lavished on any one who requested the aid of his counsel and of his under-standing,’ been appropriated solely to ‘ the improvement of his own works! What he did at first from good nature,from habit, from I knew not what proPensity of charaéter, | he did afterwards , from

- OF DIDEROT. - xhi from necessity, from principle: the fol> lowing passage shews how neatly in this view he has depicted his own character: «Tam not robbed of my life,” says hey “T give it away; and what can I do ‘* better than to grant a portion of it to “ him who thinks it of sufficient value to ask itasa boon? .... The important point

is not if the thing be done by me or by another, but if the thing “ be.done, and well done, whether by a good or a bad man... . They will “ not praise me for it, I grant, either “now or after I am no more; but I “ shall value myself upon. it, and they “ will esteem me of course. Benefi“cence, the recompence of which is sure, is not a bad exchange for-cele“ brity, which cannot always be ob- tained, and which is never acquired « without i inconvenience. ... Pethaps I "© impose

xiv TO THE MEMORY “ impose upon myself by specious rea€ sonings, and Iam only a spendthrift of * my time by setting little value upon “it; I-am only prodigal of what I des« pise; they ask it of meas nothing, and * T grant it as such*.” | * It was his being employed for two whole years in the PSilosophical and Political History of the two Indies that sustained his courage and his paticnce during that time. Who does not know . that nearly one-third of this great work is the production of his pen? We have.seen him compose a considerable part of it. He himself used to be astonished at the boldness with which he made his friend speak. But cvho, said he, will dare to put bis name to this? I, replied the Abbé, Ltell you to proceed. What man of letters does not easily recognize in the book de Esprit, and in the System of Nature, all the fine pages which ‘are, and which can only be, the production of Diderot ?..... It would be an invidious task to attempt a more complete enumeration of his ‘works and to vex those manes which we wish to. honour. | a May

OF DIDEROT. xv (May we not consider what follows as asaying of remorse escaped from the conscience of a man of letters?) “This must be so, since I should blame in * others what I approve in myself.” The circumstances, and the habits of life, which these circumstances occasion, have doubtless a great influence upon the character, the extent, and the bounds of our faculties; but nature herself often modifies them in a way so peculiar, that it would be absurd to ascribe them to any other origin. If ever there was a capacity of intellect, formed for receiving and improving every idea embraced by the circle of human knowledge, it was that of Diderot; his head was naturally the most encyclopédique of any that ever existed.

Metaphysical subtlety, profound calculation, deep 1 erudition,

xvi TO THE MEMORY erudition, poetical conception, a taste‘for the arts and antiquity; however divetsified the objects might be, his attention applied to them with the same energy, with the same interest, and with _ the same facility; but his thoughts one ‘after another rapt him to such an elevated pitch of passion, that it seemed. rather as if they were mastérs of his understanding than as if his understanding was master of them. His ideas were stronger than he, they carried him along with such an irresistible impulse so to. speak, that it was impossible for him either to arrrest their progress, or to regulate their course. | When I recall the memory.of Dide‘rot, the immense variety of his ideas, the astonishing _ niultiplicity of his knowledge, the sudden transports, the fervour

“OP DIDEROT: vii _ fervour, the impetuous tumult of his imagination, all the charins and all.the wildness of his ‘conversation, I veriture to compare his soul to-nature, in the view in which ‘he himself beheld. it, rich, fertile, abounding in germs of every kind,- sweet and savage, mild and majestic, simple and sublime, but without any ruling principle, without a gos vemor, and without a ‘God. - tam not ‘here dneaed: to oo with the infidelity of’ the age-in which I live: Superstition has been the: cause of so many-evils to men, that we may be thankful Reason has at last broken _ its yoke: but, however willingly T pardon scepticism in any man,- I think i it wouldhave been desirable for Diderot’s . . teputation, that’-lie had not. beeh. an atheist; of that he had ‘supported the vVoL.t. = ¢ character

XViil TO THE MEMORY character with less zeal. The obstinate wat which he considered himself as obliged to’ wage against God, made him lose many of-the most precious fiioments of his life, often diverted him from: the culture of literature and of the . arts, and, above all, made him neglect the talent in the exercise of which he was ‘fitted. to acquire’ celebrity. He made himself a Philosopher; Nature intended him to be an Orator or a Poet. Nor is it certain even, that, in other times, and in other

circumstances, he might not have succeeded as a. Fathet of the Church. -He would have . been: as well qualified, however, fot beating ‘the tracks of Luther «and of Calvin, had he been capable of a more _ @levated ‘deportment, and if there had not been as. much weakness in his: cha

OF DIDEROT, — xx rater as here: was firmness and energy in his. mind.. ‘All the pita all.the estimable qualities, which are ‘not -yery complex.in their: character, and ‘the. exercise. of which does not require great constancy of temper, were natural to Diderot, He was accustomed to forget himself as much: as the great part. of men.think about themselves: He was as much pleased with rendering himself useful to others, as most men are. satisfied with the énjoyment of ah agreeable and’ ’salutary exercise. ' All the ingenuity and ° activity of mind which men usually exert in making their own fortunes, he employed ‘in obliging the first -person who came in‘his way, often permitting himself to: extend . his :iberglity ber yond ithe ‘necessary: :bounds:.: A. very c 2 _ compli-.

xx TO THE MEMORY complicated intrigue, when he thought it would conduc him to his -object, communicated a new interest to the pleasure he felt in doing a service. Timid and aukward in the management of whatever related to himself, he was subjeét to no such embarrassment in conducting the affairs of others. Is be good? Is he bad? is the title of a small comedy, in which he meant to pourtray his-own character. He ‘had, .in short, , More sweetness than real - goodness, sometimes the inalice and anger of .a child, but, upon the whole,:an inexhaustible fund of good nature. -..He-was disposed, with much since“sity, to love all his neighbours, till he -‘had the strongest reasons for hating and despising them ; even when he had the “justest:cause of complaint, ten to: one . but

OF DIDEROT... XXi. but he forgot it. It was necessary, indeed, that he should do so, for, when-: ever he seriously engaged to recollect a. thing, -he had Jaid down a rule to take a note of it in some memorandum books which he kept for the purpose;

but these memorandums lay concealed in a corner of ‘his bureau ; and the whim of _ consulting this singular deposit seldom tormented him; I only saw him once recur to it, when he wished to tell me the wrongs which he*had suffered from the unfortunate John-James.. Diderot conversed more with his own ideas than with men. Though an enthusiastic supporter of materialism, it may nevertheless be said, that he was a most decided idealist in ‘his mode of thinking and of living : he was so in spite of himself, from the invincible c 3 ascendant

Xxii 10TH MEMORY ascendant of his chiaractet afd 6f his imagitiation. The: greatest attraction Which the society int which he was accustomed to live had for him, was its Beitig the only theatre in which the fiatural fire of his genius could get full” scope to buth. When age had éooled the fervour of his mind, he betarhe indifferent to Society ; : he was often more hut thih pleased with it; aad tetutned with joy to his retréat, His’ books, which affordéd a pretext for the favours conferred upoh him by Cutharine IL, and the enjoyment of which she secured ~ to him with so much grace and bounty, his books, some solitary walks, the chitchat of an intimate ‘acquaintance, patticularly of his daughter, then became his ~ most pleasant relaxations, This daughter, so teriderly and so deservedly beloved, was his délight and éonsolation

OF DIDEROT. XX tion till the last moment of his life; blessed with her society, he supported with patience, and invariable serenity of mind, the protracted sufferings, and the painful ennui of a disease, the issue of which he long foresaw without fear or dismay. .

AM BBall. eR PAT AwIST 7 AND HIS Pe ne MAS T E R.: How did they meet ?. “By chance Jike other people. What were their names? What signifies it to you. Frem what part of the world did they come? . From the place they . deft last. Whither were they going ? Must people then always know where they go ? For what sayings | were - they

26... JAMES . THE. RATALIST. they “remarkable? The Master edid nothing particular, and James used to say that his captain was wont to repeat, - that all the good and the evil which befalls us here below was decreed on high. MASTER. It is a grand apothegm this. JAMES. My captain would add that every ball that was fired from a a musquet had its billet. ; MASTER. _ And he was right..... — After a short pause Jamies exclaimed —Devil take the inn-keeper and his inn ! MASTER.

’ Nb fis-MastaRy. © 97-. MA 8. T é k, “Why : send your “neighbour to the devil > ‘This i is not like 2 a a christian, roe . TAME S, “Why? because while I got drank viith his bad: wine I forgot to take- our horses to water.. My. father. ‘observes a jt and turns angry. I shake my head ; he takes a cudgel-and rubs down my shoulders not with-all the: tendémess in the woild. A regiment was passing by on its route to the camp at Fontenoy, and I enlist in ‘disgust. We'arrive and the engagement takes' place. OT AE eg RL . And you received a ‘ball with ° yon "address. : JAMES.

28 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES. You have guessed it; a shot in the knee ; and God knows the good and the bad adventures to which this shot has given rise. They are just as closely’ connected with each other as the links of a chain. Without this shot, for instance, I believe I should neither have been in love nor a cripple all my life. You have then been in leve ? JAMES, What though I have ? MASTER. . And-in consequence of a shot too.— JAMES. An consequence of a shot. eg MASTER.

AND HIS MASTER, 20 » MASTER. You never told me a word ofthis. SA M E 8. True, I never did. . MASTER, ae _ a ee od, Why because: it could be told neither sooner nor later. MASTER, And is the moment of commiunicating the history of these amours arrived ? o SAMES Whe knows that it is? oo. MASTER.

30 JAMES THE -FATALIST MASTER. At all'adventutes begin. aan James began the history. of his amours. It was after dinner. It was. drowsy time’ of day, and his Master fell asleep. Night surprised them in the middle of the fields, and they lost

their way. Conceive the Master then ini a terrible passion, and -horse-whipping his Valet without mercy, while the poor devil observed between every stroke, “ This one ‘too it seems was desreedon high! wie cell | goatee gy -? e i’ : : : “You s see, Cos that Ta am ina fne way, and that I have it in my power to make you wait a year, two years, three years, for the story of James's amours, oars by

“+ AND HIS-MASTER,: = 81: by separating, him from his Master and making each of them encounter all-thedangers I please.. What hinders me from’ marrying the Master and making him.a cuckold ? from-embarking James for the Isles ? and conduéting his Master to the same place? from bringing | them both to France in the same vessel’? How easy is it to invent stories! But both of them will get off with spending a:bad night, and you ort: for: this short ee ry ? ane, ‘at eg: ‘Dawn secaed Conceive them _again mounted upon their horses:dnd pursuing their journey——And where: were they going? This is the second time you have asked me the queition; and this is the second time.that I answer, what is that to you? i:df - I explain the object of their journey,

32 SAMES THE FATALIST ney, farewell to James's amours, . . . « They proceeded some time on theif way in silence. When they had both a little recovered from their chagrin the Master said to his Valet: Well then, James, how far had we got with your amours ? JAMES. I believe we had got the length of the defeat of the enemy’s army. They endeavoured to save themselves. They were pursued.. Every one consulted his own safety. I remained upon the field of battle, buried under the number - of the dead and wounded, which was prodigious. Next day I was placed, along with a dozen of others, upon a cart, in order to be conducted to one of, eur hospitals. Ah! sir, I do not be= i lieve

AND HiS MASTER, 33 lieve that there is any wound more severe than one on the knee, MASTER a Let -us proceed; however :. James, you are mistaken. JAMES. No indeed, Sir, Iam not mistaken : ag "there are in that spot I know not how many

bones, tendons, and other things, which are distinguished by, I cannot tell what names..... A country looking man who followed them, withagirl whom he carried behind him, and had listened to their conversation, took up the subject, saying, the Gentleman is right.... It is not ascertained to whom this expression of the Gentleinan was addressed ; but it was not well VOL. I. D received 4

- 3A JAMES THE FATALIST ieéeived by James and by his Master. James said to the person who interfered thus indiscreetly in the conversation, How come you ‘to intfoduce your te-thatks upoh this affair ?

AND HIS MASTER.’ - 38. coats tittned over her head. James dis+ mounts, extricates the foot of this poor creature, and puts’ down her petticoats. I don’t know whether he began with smoothing her petticoats, or disentangling her foot; but if you could judge of this woman’s situation by her cries, she certainly was grievously wounded. And James’s Master said to the surgeon, See. what you have done. by. your: “eagerness to deionstiate ; and the Surgeon_returned, See what it is to have fefused to attend to my demonstration... i+. Meariwhile James addressed the woman, either i in her fallen state, or after.she . had got up again, Comfort yourself, - my good woman ; it was neither your own fault, “nor the fault of Mr. the Dottor, nor mine, nor that of my Master. It is becatrse it was decreed on high, that, upon’ this day, on this p 2 very”

36 JAMES THE FATALIST very: road, at the present hour, Mr. the Doétor_should choose to prattle, that my Master and I should be a little cross, that you should get a contusion: — on the head, and that we should see your.... What might not this adventure grow to in my hands, should I take a fancy to tease you? I might give a great deal of ‘importance tothis woman; I might make her the niece of the Rector of the neighbouring village; I might set all the peasants in it by the ears; I might prepare stories of battles and of loves; for, in fact, this country girl, under her plain attire, was very pretty. James and his Master did not fail to perceive it. Love does

not always wait for so seducing an opportunity. Why should not James fall in love a second time? Why

AND HIS-MASTER. 37 Why should he not a sécond’ time’ be the rival, and the successful rival too, of his Master? And how do you know that they had been in this situation al_ ready? What! always ‘at your questions: you have no inclination, then, that James should continue the’story of his amours? Once for all, pray explain what you would. have me do. Will this afford you pleasure, then, or will it not? If it will give you satisfaCtion, let us again mount the woman on the crupper behind her conductor ; allow them to proceed on their journey, and return to our travellers. Upon this occasion it was James who first: took up the conversation, and said. to his Master, Observe what is the way of the world. : You who never were wounded in the , D3 whole

38 JAMES THE FATALIST course of your life, and who know nothing of what it is to receive a shot on the knee, will persist in maintaining to me, who have had my knee bruised to pieces, and have been a cape these twenty years... “MASTER. You may be in the right. But it is ~ owing to this impertinent Surgeon that you are still upon the waggon with your comrades, yet far from the hospital, far from being cured, and far from falling in love.. . JAMES. . Whatever you may choose to think of the matter, the pain of my knee was excessive : it was sadly encreased by the hardness of the carriage, by the ruggedness of the roads, and at every jolt I uttered most piercing cries. MASTER.

“AND HIS MASTER, 30 MASTER,..-.° * Because it was decreed ‘on. high: that hats ahould cry? a FAM ES. ‘Assuredly : I had. bled-to death, ‘and _all had been over with, me, if our cart, the last of the line, had not stopped at the door of a cottage. Bi requested to come down, and Iwas: Jaid ; ‘UPON, the ground. A young woman, who. was standing; at the door of the. -egttage, went in, .and almost ‘immediately . returned with a glass and a bottle of wine. I drank one or two glasses

in haste. The carts, which preceded ours drove on. They were going to” rephice me among my conipanions, when, dliniging close to the clothes @f this woman, and to every thing around me,-I:protested that I would not mount ‘again, DA and

40 JAMES THE FATALIST and that, if I was to die, I preferred meeting death where I was, rather than two leagues farther on. As I uttered these last words, J fell into a swoon, When I recovered from this state, I found myself-undressed, lying on a bed which occupied one of the corners of the cottage, and beside me a peasant, the owner of the place, his wife, the . person who had given me the assistance, and some little children. The woman had dipped the corner of her apron in vinegar, and was rubbing my nose and temples. MASTER. Ah, “wretch ! ah, knave! . . Vilisin, I see you coming. JAMES. Master of mine, I believe you see nothing at all. MASTER.

AND HISMASTER. = Al MASTER. Is not this the woman with whom y you are about te fail in sib 2 . ae A ME Ss. And though I were to fall in love with her, what is there to be said on the _ subject? Have people i in their power to fall in love, or not to fall i in love, as they please? And, if people are in love, are they at liberty to act as if they _ were not? Had this been decreed on high, whatever you have a mind to say _ tome; I too might have said to myself ; “Imight have beat.my breast, dashed . my head against the wall, torn my hair, but things would neither have been better nor worse, and my benefactor. had still been a cuckold. ‘MASTER. .

42. -- JAMES THE FATALIST M-A’S:T:E R. _. But, ‘Teasoning. in your way, there is no crime which may not be perpetrated without remorse. JAMES, More than once have I perplexed my ’ brain with this objection ; but notwithstanding this, in spite of all I can do, I ‘always recur to the saying of my Captain—* Allthe good and the evil which “ befalls us is decreed on high.” Are you, Sir, acquainted with any means of -erasing this decree. Can I help being myself ? and, being myself, can I agt otherwise than I do? Can I be at once myself and a different person? And, since I first. came into the world, -has ‘any single moment occurred in which _ this has not

held true? J reach as long as you please: your argments, perhaps, may be very good; but if it is decreed i within

AND. HIS. MASTER. ~ 43 within me, or on high, that I should think them bad, pray what would ye have 4 me to do? . MASTE R. Tam musing a little upon something, and it is, whether your benefactor was to be cuckolded because it was decreed on high, or whether it was decreed. on high because you were to make yout benefactor a cuckold ¢ ? JAMES, aos Both these decrees were written, the one by the side of the other. Every . thing was decreed at once. It is just like a large roll which unfolds by lise and little. .... 4 — You may conceive, Reader, how far I might push this conversation upon a subject, about which so much

aA JAMES THE FATALIST much has been-spoken, so much has been written for two thousand years, without getting one step forward. If you do not take very kindly what [tell you, at least receive ia good part that there are some things which I spare you the trouble of hearing. While our two theologians were disputing without understanding each other, as in theology it will sometimes happen, night approached. They were traversing a country in which travelling at all times was unsafe, and. which was still more so at a period when -a bad administration, combined with wretchedness, had multiplied without end the number of malefactors. They halted at one of the ‘most miserable inns in the world. Two wretched beds were -prepared for them in a room formed

AND HIS MASTER, A5 formed by a partition of boards that displayed on every side wide-gaping crevices. They called for supper. They were served with dirty water, black bread and -sour.wine. . The host, ‘the ‘hostess, children and servants, every thing hada forbidding aspe&t. Close by their side they heard immoderate bursts of laughter, and the tumultuous joy of about a dozen robbers, who had been before them and engrossed all the provisions, James was tolerably tranquil: his Master was far from being in the same temper. ‘I'he latter was employed in placing

his chagrin before him in every attitude,‘and in every. point -of view ; while his servant devoured a few slices of black bread, and swallowed, not without wry faces, some glasses of bad wine. They were in this situation, when they heard a knocking at their . door.

46 JAMES THE FATALIST door. It was a waiter, whom these insolent and dangerous neighbours had compelled to carry to our travellers, on one of their plates, all the bones of a fowl which they had eaten up. James, fired with indignation at this treatment, laid hold of his Master’s pistols, Where are you going ?—Leave me to manage the matter—Where are you going, I say ?—Why ! to bring this rabble to reason.—Don't you know -there is a dozen of them ?—Weretheyan hundred, the number is of no consequence, if it 1s decreed on high that they are not enough.—Devil confound you with your impertinent babble..... James makes his escape from his Master, enters the room where the ruffians were assembled with a loaded pistol in each hand. Quick: to bed, said‘ he, the first that stirs I shall blow his brains out..... James's

AND HIS MASTER. 47 _ James's air and tone of voice so strongly proved him to be in earnest, that the rogues, who valued their lives as much as honest men, rose from table without the-smallest murmur, undressed themselves and went to bed. His Master, doubtful of the issue of this adventure, waited his return in fear-and trembling. James entered the room-loaded with the spoils of these people. He had seized the whole of their effects, that theymight not be tempted to rise again. - He had extinguished their candles and doubled-locked their door, the key of which he kept in his hand with ‘one of his pistols. At present, Sir, said he to his Master, we have nothing more to-do than barricade this door by pushing our beds close to it, and then go,to sleep in tranquillity. Accordingly, he. set to work and pushed the beds up against the

48 JAMES THE FATALIST the door, recounting to his Master with great coolness

and brevity the detail of this expedition. MASTER. ‘What a devil of a fellow you are, James! You believe then. ... JAMES. I neither believe nor disbelieve. MASTER. Had they refused to go to bed? . - JAMES, That was impossible. MASTER. Why! JAMES, Because they did not refuse. MASTER,

e -AND HIS MASTER: - 49. MAST E.R. ~ Should they rise again? JAMES, Why then, so uel the better, or $0 much the worse. ee MAST ER, P Wheels seis eats JAMES, . of if the sea were to. boil, as the saying is, we should have abundance. of fish ready cooked: What the. devil, sir, but this minute you thought that I tan avery great risk, yet nothing was more unfounded...Now you imagine yourself in imminent danger, yet, perhaps, nothing is more false. All the VoL, I. E* .. people

30 JAMES THE PATALIST people in this house dread one another, which proves that we are a parcel of fools .. . . Conversing thus he undresses, nisnblés into bed and falls asleep. His Master, eating in his turn, a slice of black bread and drinking a glass of bad wine, pricked up his ears, looked at James, who lay snoring, and said : What a devil of a fellow is this? .... Following the example of his Valet, the Master stretched: himself also upon his bed, but he could not like him enjoy repose; for he did not sleep a wink. At day=break James. felt ‘somebody shaking him, it was his Master wha whispered. him : James ! James! : JAME S, “Witte mater? MASTER.

AND His MASTER!’ = SP MASTER, | It is gay? ~ ; JAMES. Very possibly... 6 6." MA ct BR. Rise then, 0 9) JAMES, Why? | M ‘A 8 7 E R, a That we may leave this ie in all haste, i tee Bs.” oe Why? Lobel ee cal SMe set pe Be MASTER,

4% JAMES-THE FATALIST MASTER. Because we are not well here: JAMES. Who knows that we ate not, or that we shall be better any where else ? MASTER. . James ! JAMES. Hey-day! James! James! What a devil of a fellow you are? MASTER. What a devil of a fellow rather are you: James, my friend. James

AND His ‘MASTER.’ 55° James rubbed his eyes,yawned several times, stretched himself, rose, put on his clothes, very deliberately; replaced the beds in their former

station, sallied: out of the room, went down stairs, into the stable, saddled and bridled the horses, awoke the landlord who Was still asleep, dischatged ‘the: reckoning; kept the keys of the two chambers and: off set our heroes.. 1 The Master wished ‘to ‘proceed at!¢ brisk trot; James wished to pace along, and always agreeably” to his system. ‘When they had got:a considerable distance from their late uncomfortable lodging, the Master hearing something rattle in James's pockets, asked him what it was.. “James replicd, that it was the two keys of the chambers. E3 MASTER.

54 JAMES as FATALIST MASTER. And why. did zee not: giv them back? a7 JAMES, -: Because it will be necessary to force the two doors, that of our fellow-lodgers in- order to liberate them from their prison, that of our room in order to restore them their clothes, and becallse all this will give us time, ‘MASTER. “Mery well, James! ‘Bat we gain Smet Ue | a ee ° ‘JAMES. ys - Why? raat my ‘faith: tT don't ~ know, ‘ : s MASTER,

TAND HIS /MASTER,:, (55 MAS TER, Besides, if you wish to paint Wwhy travel at that: slow ‘pitte ics us a . rag Se re eee JAMES, — It is for want of Knowing what is déciéed bn high, that We felehdr Mnow what we meaaj nor ‘what we >do,i:amd that.we follow our Caprice which we ‘call reason, or our reason which often is nOthing Dat a darigétong whilnsy, thitt sbiietiiiiey furits-OREW Alp sornd‘fintes ils bck: WBE. ee RUE aly ae

56 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES.Why not ?...A fool . . . Stop... is an unhappy man, and by consequence a happy man is wise. = MasTER. And what do you mean by a happy man.and an unhappy man ? Sees “yams. That point is easy. A happy man is -he whose happiness is decreed on high, and by consequence, he whose misery is decreed on high isan unhappy man, | MASTER. And who is he who has decreed on - high happiness and misery ? JAMES.

AND HIS' MASTER. ~ ‘57 JAMES. : And who is he that formed the’ and register

on which every decreé ‘is. in= scribed? A Captain, the friend of my Captain, would have cheerfully given more money than I’ll say to’‘know. ‘As | for him, he would not have given a doit; no more would I; for what _ Should I gain by that? Could I thus escape falling into the pit where I'am to break my neck ? MASTER. ‘baie you could. ee 658 _ JAMES. tv. “ce _ I however believe not: for in that case there must needs be a false line it. that great register which contains trath, _ which

58 JAMES THE. FATALIST which contains only truth, and which contains the whole truth. It would be inscribed in thé great régister, Jdmes' - shall break his neek such a day; and yet Janes should not break his neck. Can you conceive it possible that this could be the case whoever be the author of this great ace MASTER. ~ Much might be said sae that point. . JAMES. My captain was of opinion that prudence is a suppovition dni which we are authorised by experience to consider the circumstances in which we are placed as causes of certain effects which in relation to the future are fitted to -inspire hope or fear, MASTER.

AND HIS MASTER. 59 "MASTER. And. you understood.’ something of these ptinciples : ? : SAMES. Assuredly I did. By fees 1 beeame acquainted with his language. But he would say, Who can boast the possession of a sufficient share of experiencé? Has he who flattered himself with having. made the best provision, never proved a dupe? Besides, is there any man capable of justly appreciding the circumstances in which he is placed? The calculation which passes in our thinds, and that which is inscribed in the register on high, are two ‘calcula: tions widely different. Is it we- wha guide destiny, or destiny that regulates us? How many plats, wisely concerted, have failed? how many shall yet prove -3 abortive ?

60 JAMES THE FATALIST abortive ? How many mad designs have succeeded; how many shall yet be crowned with success! This my Captain told me after the taking of Bergenop-Zoom and Port Mahon; and he would add, that, though prudence did not secure the fortunate issue of a design, it consoled and excused us for its

failure. He would sleep, too, the night before an engagement, as quietly in his tent as in garrison, and marched to battle as he would have gone to a ball. ' Of him, indeed, you might fairly have exclaimed, What a devil of a fellow! At this moment they heard behind them, at a little distance, shouts and cries. They looked back, and saw a _ number of men armed with poles and pitch-forks, advancing in all haste. You will imagine that these were the people

-AND HIS MASTER. . Or people of the inn, their servants, and the robbers we mentioned. You will. imagine that, in the morning, they had broken open their doors for want of thekeys, and that the robbers had supposed our two travellers had decamped with their spoils. These were the thoughts by which James was possessed, and he muttered between his teeth, Cursed be the keys, and that whim or reason which tempted me'to carry them away : cursed be the prudence by which it was dictated, &c. &c. You will suppose. now; that this little army is to fall upon James and his Master, that a bloody battle is to ensue, that the cudgels are to be exercised, and pistols fired; and it rests with me whether all this shall: not actually take place :- but them farewell the truth of history, farewell. to the-narrative of James's amours. Our travellers

62 JAMES THE FATALIST travellers were not pursued. I know not what happened at the inn after their departure. They continued their route, advancing always without knowin whither they went, although they had some notion where they meant to go, beguiling fatigue and ennui with alternate: silence and talk, as those who travel use to do; ; “and sometimes, too, those who sit at home. 7 It is very evident that I am not writ* inga romance, since I negleé&t what a romance writer would not fail to em_Pley. He who should take what F write for truth, perhaps would be nearer the mark than he who should consider It to be fabulous. . The Master was the first who broke silerice this time, and began upon the old

“" AND HIS MASTER, ~ 62 old string :—Well, James, now for.the story of years

amours. JAMES. I.don’t know whereabouts I ped I have been so often interrupted, that I should do quite ds well to begin afresh. MASTER, No, no. Recovered from your swoon, at the door of the cottage, you found yourself in bed, surrounded bye its inhabitants. | AMES. . Very well. The most urgent circum. stance of the case was to geta.surgeon, and there was none to be had for. a whole. league round. The. landlord: mounted one of his children on horseback, and sent him to the nearest place.

64 JAMES THE FATALIST place. Meanwhile his wife had warmed some coarse wine, torn an old shirt of "her husband, and my knee was: bathed, bound up with’ bandages, and wrapped in linen. Some lumps of sugar, rescued from the mice, were put into a quantity of the wine that had been employed in bathing me, which I swallowed. Then they exhorted me to "have patience. It was late. The people of the house sat down to table, and supped. Supper was soon over; yet neither child nor surgeon was come. The father grew ill-humoured. He _ Was naturally a peevish fellow ; he looked sulky to his wife. Nothing was to his mind. He dismissed the children harshly to bed. His wife sat down upon a stool, and took her distaff. He went backwards and forwards,. and at every turn he sought some pretence to. quarrel,

AND HIS MASTER.- 65. quarrel. If you had been at. the mill: as I desired... . and he completed the. sentence by a significant shrug towards that side where my bed stood.—I shall go to-morrow.—You-had better have gone to-day, as I desired you..... And whom do you expect to dress up that — chaff which is still left in the barn — It shall be done to-morrow.—What we have draws near a close, and you would have been much better employed in doing it to-day, as I desired you.. . And that hag of barley which is spoiling in the loft, Pll wager you have never once thought of spreading it out.—The children have done it.—You ought to have done it yourself. Had you been in the loft you would not have been standing at the door... At this moment arrived. . first one-surgeon, then a: second; ‘then a VoL. I. . F. _ third

6 JAMES THE PATALIST third along with the little boy of the cottage, MASTER, ' So, there you are now as well proYided. with surgeons' as St. Roch was with hats, JAMES. The first was from home when the little boy called at his house ; but his wife had sent notice to the second; and the third had accomparied the litde boy. Ah! good evening, brothers of the profession, are you here ? says the first to the two others, They had made the greatest possible _haste, they were warm, they were thirsty. They sat down round the table before the table-cloth was removed. The wife goes down to the cellar and returns , with

AND HIS MASTER. 67 with a bottle. The husband muttered "between his teeth : Whit the devil was she doing at the door ? ,. . They dtank ; they talked of the diseases prevalent i in the district; they went through the whole course of their practice. I com- . plain ; they tell me, we shall be with you in a moment. After this bottle they desire a second, to be placed to the account of miy entertainment ; then a third and a fourth, always to be placed to the account of my entertainment ; and at every bottle the husband repeated his first exclamation : what the devil was she doing at the door? What might not some writers have made of this incident ? how might they _ have wiought up the story of these three surgeons, their conversation over the a aes fourth

68 JAMES THE FATALIST fourth bottle, the vast number of their marvellous cures, the impatience of -James, the ill humour of the landlord, the dissertations of these village Esculapius' respecting James's knee; their Mifferent opinions, one maintaining that James was a dead man, if his limb was not immediately cut off; another that it was necessary to extract the ball with the piece of cloth which it had carried in along with it, 'and if possible to preserve the poor devil's leg. In the mean time James was sitting upon his bed -compassionating his limb and bidding it his last adieus, like one of our generals between Dufouart and Louis. The third surgeon was plying the bottle, while a quarrel was fomenting between the other two, which from invective proceeded to blows, _ You

AND His MASTER: 60 You are welcome to’ maké what you will of every ‘thing. you . find’ in ‘tomances, in ancient comedy, and in‘society, I freely. resign it-to you. When I heard the landlord say:'of his wife; what business had she. at the door, I recollected the Harpagon of Moliere, when he says of his son : what had he to do in this galley? and coneeiving that it is necessary to unite pleasantry with truth, a circumstance which ‘has given permanence to. the question, what had he to do in this gailey? * I concluded that-the expression ‘of my peasant, what had she to-do to at the door? will never pass for a proverb, . * Quallait-i} faire dais cette giltreP A, preverbial expression in- France which is applied . to the situation of a person who has involved himself in difficulty by any particular act. F 3 James

70 JAMES TAE FATALIST James did not employ the same scruples with regard to his Master that I have observed with you. He did nat omit the - slightest cifcumstance, even at the risk of setting him asleep a se-. cond time. If it was not the most able, it was at least the most athletic of the three sufgeons who remained master of the pena - 4 . Are you hot.going, you 1 tell me, to lay before us anatomical knives, incisions, blood streaming, and to present us with the sight of a ‘surgical -opera~ tion. . Ia your. opinion, would not this be in a fine taste?..... Proceed, how-. ever; wave the Surgeon’s operation; but at least you will allow James to tell his Master, . ashedid: Ah! Sir, itis, a terrible business to set a fractured knee! And his Master to tell him as beforé

AND HIS MASTHR: . 71 before... Go on, Jashes, you are out of | ii reckoning ..:..But what i would not conceal: from’ syou::for ‘the: ~ wealth’ of the Indies, scarcely had Jaines’s Master ‘made this impertinent reply, when his horse sturnbied and fell down, and his knee struck with great violence upon a sharp flint, and he fell a roaring with all his might, I am killed! Uhave broke my khee!..... Although James, the best’ hearted. soul in the umiiversé, was tenderly attached to his Master, I would give a great eal to-know what ipassed-in his mind, ifpot the first moiménт, at least after he ‘was assured that this fall ‘would be attended’ with ‘no ‘serious

consequences, and whether he was able to resist: slight emotion of secret joy at an.acci_ dent which taught his Master to esti‘maté the nature of a wound on the v4 knee.

2 JAMES THE FATALIST knee. Besides, there fis another thing, reader, which I wish from my heart, you would tell me, and that is, whether his Master would not have preferred a wound even more grievous upon any other place than the knee, or whether -he was not more sensible to shame than to pain. When the Master had .a little recovered from his fall and the anguish it had occasioned, he adjusted himself again on the saddle and clapped spurs to his horse. which darted away like lightning. James's beast did the same, - for there subsisted between these two animals the same intimacy as between their riders. They were two pair of steady friends. . When

AND HIS MASTER. 73 When the two horses, having gal~ loped themselves out of breath, resumed their. ordinary pace, James said to his Master: Hey-day, sir, what do you think of it now? MASTER, Of what ? JAMES: Of a hurt on the knee, MASTER | :I am of your opinion, it is one of thé Most painful. JAMES, On‘your own ? . MASTER, “No, nos on'yours, on ming, on 1 any knee in the universe. JAMES,

74 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES. Master ! Master ! you do not rightly consider, that we never feel but for ourselves, ce, : ‘ MASTER. - What nonsense ! JAMES. Ah ! could I but speak as I can think! It was decreed on high, however, that I should never find words to express what passed in my iiead. Here James. got entangled in ‘a me- taphysical speculation, very abstruse, and perhaps very just... He laboured to make his Master comprehend, that the word pain was not connected with any idea; and that it only began to ‘signify something the. moment.it recalled to

AND HIS MASTER. 73. to our memory some sensation we had ‘experienced. His master demanded if he had ever been in labour? No, replied James.—And do you’ believe that the operation of child bearing i 1s attended with very, great pain? Assuredly ! Do you feel for women in the pains of labour?—Very much. You

sometimes feel then for ethers besides yourself ?—I feel for those who wring their hands, who tear their hai, who utter cries, because I know by experience that these expressions ase never exhibited without suffering ; but as for the pain of a woman in labour; E know not what itis, thank God! But, to return to a pain with which we are both acquainted, the histary ‘af my knee, in which your fall has given you an interest... ... “MASTER. ~

96 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER, No, James; the history of your amours, in which my past disappointments have given me an equal interest. : | JAMES. . Conceive me then dressed, somewhat eased, the surgeon gone, and my host and hostess retired to bed. Their apartment was separated from mine only by a partition of boards, through, which you could have a clear view of whatever passed, pasted over with grey paper, on which were drawn some pictures in colours. I chanced to be awake, and heard the wife saying to her husband: Let me alone, do: I am not at present in a mood for merriment. A poor wretch who was upon the point of expiring at our door. . . . My dear, you

AND HIS MASTER, - 77 you can tell me all this by and by— No, it can’t be: if you don’t forbear I shall get out of bed. And, do you imagine that I can have. any relish for such things when my heart: is so oppressed :—Oh ! oh ! if you require so much entreaty the worse for -yourself. —It is not that I need to -be entreated, but it is because you sometimes are of so harsh,.... It is that—-It is that.... After a very short pause, the husband resumed the conversation : “My dear, said he, admit now, however, that. from a misplaced compassion, you have involved us in an embarrassment, from which it is almost impossible to be extricated. It is a bad year, and hardly can we supply the wants of ourselves and our children, Corn is’ excessively high,

78 JAMES THE FATALIST high. No wine to be had! For all this, were employment to be obtained, —but the rich -abridge their mode of living; poor folks

can get-nothing to do. For one day that they are employed they are idle four. No one pays what he owes; creditors proceed to the most _Yigorous extremities ; and at such a time now do you chuse to shelter a person of whom you know nothiig; a stranger, who will remain in your house as long as it-shall please God and the surgeon, who will be in no hurry to perform a cure ; for surgeons always take. care to prolong the disease as much as pos- ~ sible; one besides who is not worth:a groat, and will double or treble our exfence? Look there, my dear, haw do ‘you propose to get rid of this man? Speak, my dear, give me some reason. ~—How is it possible to talk with you on the

AND: HIS MASTER. 79 the subject >—You say: that I am illnatured; that I grumble; what then; who would not be so too:? Who could help grambling ? There. still was left a little wine in the cellar ; God‘ knows the road ‘it will go ! The surgeons drank last night more than we arid out children would have consumed in a week ! And, pray, who must pay the surgeon, who, you may well believe, will not attend for nothing ?—Yes, indeed, and it becomes you well to say all this! Because we are already wretched enough, you wish to get more children, as if we had not plenty already !— Pshaw ! no, indeed !—But yes; ingleed, Iam sure I shall fall with-child !—So you say every time—It has never, however, failed to be the case when my ear itched after, and I now feel the itching as formerly.—Your ear knows no3 . thing

80 JAMES THE FATALIST thing about the matter.—Don’t touch me; let go my ear! Forbear, man! what, are you mad! You will be the worse for this——No, no, the last time was on: St. John’s eve.—You will never rest till .... and then a month hence you will look sulky as if it were my fault—No, no.—And in nine — months it will be the devil and all— No, no—It was your own desire!—Yes, yes—You will remember? And you wont say, as you have always said before !—Yes, yes.... And then, after going backwards and forwards, from no to yes, and yes to no, this man enraged at his wife for having yielded to a sentiment of nnaneany Sales MASTER.

That is the very reflection I was making. yo 8 , JAMES,

‘AND HIS MASTER. ~— 81 JAMES. . Certain it is, that this husband was not. much given to consider consequences ; but his wife was handsome, and he was young. You never seé so many children gotten at other times as during a period of misery. MASTER. — Population never goes on 50 fast as among beggars. JAMES. . A child more is nothing to them; they are supported by charity. Besides, it is the only pleasure that costs nothing. At night they console themselves without expence for the calamities of the day.---The reflections “of this man, however, were, nevertheless, just. While I indulged these remarks VOLE G _ Twas

82 JAMES THE FATALIST , Iwas attacked by a violent pain in my knee, and cried out: Oh! my knee! The husband exclaimed, Ah ! my dear. And. the wife echoed the exclamation, ah! my dear! But..... but-the man there.in the next room milcHey day ! what of the man ?—He may have overheard us.—Overheard what ?—I dare _ not look him.in the face to-morrow— And for.-what ? Are you not my wife ? Am I not your husband? Is a-wife to. have a husband, and a husband a wife, for nothing ?—Oh t oh }—Well, what's the matter now?—My ear! imy ear! —Good-lack, your ear ?—It is worse than ever ?-—Lie still and ‘fleep ; it will go off.~I can’t. .Ah! my ear, my ear !~My ear, my-ear, that’ is. easily said. . . . I will not tell you what passed between them ; but the wife, after re-. peating, My ear! my ear !-several nes in

AND “HIS MASTER..- 83 in a low and hurried. tone of voice, at length ended with sighing, in broken accents, my ea....13 and when this, my ¢4...T was. finished, something or other, joined to: the silence which succeeded, led me to imagine that the pain in her ear was. by. some means allayed ; no matter how, I was : pleased that it was so. MASTER. ‘And so was.she—James, now lay your hand upon your heart, and swear that this is not the very woman with whom you fell in.love.. _ JAMES. I swear she was not. mae t G2 MASTER.

84 JAMES THE FATALIST. ; MASTER. So much the worse for you. JAMES. Tei

is. sO | much the better, ¢ or so much. the worse, as it might have happened. You seem to think, that women with -such an ear as her’s are not very backward to listen ? . MASTER. I belive that so it is decreed on high, JAMES. I believe that it is written in the same decree, that they can’t listen very long to the same person, and that they are always a little given to lend their ear to another. | MASTER.

- -AND HIS MASTER.- 85 MASTER | Very pestle: | They had now got smote in.an — endless dispute. concerning. women ; one affirming that they were good, the other, that they: were bad; and. both were right; the ore, that they -were fools, the: other, that they were wifs ; and they both were right. The one, that. they were perfidious, “the : other, ‘that they were faithful ; :and they were, both right. The one:that they. wére: avaricious, the other,:'that they-\were ‘liz beral ;. and they both were right:7:Fhe " one, that they were beautiful, the-other, that they were :ugly; and they~ both were right. The one, that they were ial ‘the other, that they were. disStee St CLST Ose. 2ereet

B60 sANES THE FATALIST creet; the one, that they were candid, the other, that they were deceitful; the one, that they wet1e-ignorant, the other, that they were enlightened ; the: one, that: they were ‘modest, ‘the other, that they were. licentious ;: the one, that they were fodlish, the other, that they wére wise ; the one; that they were little, the other, that:they were ally anil still: ie were ‘both th Fight." While they were aig th dite sputé,:"upon: which ; they::might: have made-the tout: of ithe:globe;* without being -sient::a smple minute,‘ and: without ever coming to.en agrecinent, they wete ovértaken by.4 storm, which :com= pelled-them ‘to:push.on-... Whither?» Whither? : In. truth, reader, you are: exceedingly troublesome ‘with this cariosity of yours! And what in the devil's

< AND HIS) MASPERA. “87 _devil’s. name doés -it \coneern: you? Though I were to tell’ you ‘it was ‘to ‘Saint Germain, or Pontoise, our lady; of Loretto; or Saint Jaines of: Compas-tella, would you. ‘be a whit- the -wiser-! ? ‘If you insist upon it, I

wall tell: you, tHat ‘they pushed on towards... yess why not? ... towards a thee castle over -the gate, of which:was: inscribed, » 6:1 belong to nobody. and I belopg;:to -every. body. -You-.were in it, before -you entered, and you will’ still-be. is it when you. go.'away.”. . Did they enter then into this:castle ?--No}- far (either -the inscription was. false, :or they. were in it before they entered. —But, atleast. fing came out of it?-—-Nos fer: either the inscription was false, ‘or they were - still in it-when they went dwayu-—Then pray what did they there 2{:James, said, cwhat was decreed. on high js and. his _ master, what he had a mind ; and they GA - both

88 JAMES THE FATALIS? both were right—What company did they find in it ?—Promiscuous.—The conversation that passed ?—Some truth and a great deal of falschood.—Were there any men of wit there ?—Whiere is the place you will not meet with some ? And, besides, there were impertinent inquisitive fellows, to be shunned more than the pestilence——What provoked James.and his Master all the time they walked about? . ..—-They walked about then ?—What else can people do when they neither sit nor liein bed? James and his Master were provoked to find a score of impudent fellows, who.engrossed: the most superb apartments: ‘where they always remained close shut Up, pretending, contrary to common right, and the true meaning of the inscription, that the castle had been bequeathed to them in full property, and - who,

AND HIS ‘MASTER. = 89> who, by the assistance of a number of. idle rascals in their pay, had brought over to their side'a number of other idle rogues in their pay, perfectly ‘ready to hang or run through the’’body: the first’ man who ventured to contradict theni. Nevertheless, about the time that James’ and his Master were there, some’ oc‘casionally had the courage to oppose their pretensions. —With impunity — That was as it happened. . I see you are going ‘to object, that _ [trifle, and that, not knowing how: to dispose of my travellers, I have recourse to allegory, thé ordinary resource’. of minds destitute of invention. -I will sactifice my allegory and all the advantages I could derive from-it ; Iwill subscribe to any thing you please

upon condition, however, that you do not oe teaze

QO JAMES THE FATALIST *. teaze: me about the last place’ where -James ‘and’ his Master took. up. their lodging ; whether. they. landed in a __darge-city, and went:to spend the: night -with girls ;. whether: they passed the night at the house of an: old friend, by whom they were superbly entertained, or took shelter among: mendicant friars -where they had bad lodging and worse cheer for the love of:God ;. that:they were received into a nobleman’s house, where they wanted every thing neces‘sary in the midst of ‘all that -was superfluous ; or--sallied ‘in the morning ‘out of-a splendid inn, where they were charged extravagantly fora wretched supper served in plate, and a night's Jodging in damask curtains, in damp ‘sheets: and an ill ~ made - bed ; or that they. shared’ the hospitality -of a village parson with a competent’ living,

- AND HIS MASTER, - gi _ ing, who made ‘fo- -sctuple to “Tay the barn=yards ‘ ‘of his! parishioners “ander. contribution, fof an ‘omelet, ‘oa fricaseed chicken ; or that they got drunk with delicious wines, enjoyed excellent cheer, and took a complete surfeit in a~ rich abbey of Berriarditiés: - For though all this to. you, may appear equally possible, James was not of the same. opi_hion. He considered nothing, to_be on high. It is undoubtedly true, however from whatever place you choose to make them set. out, scarcely. had they advanced twenty paces, when. the “‘Master said to James, after. having at ‘the same time, as ustial, taken a pinch of snuff, Well, James, n¢ now for fhe € history | of your atnoury. ee ei . Tnstead

_Q92 JAMES THE FATALIST Instead of returning an answer, James exclaimed: Devil take the history of my amours! Don’t you see that T have a Seas What have you left ? Without making: any answer James turned all his pockets inside out, and rummaged them all to no purpose. He had left his travelling-purse under the bolster of his bed; and no sooner had he. confessed the fact than his Master wished the history of his amours at the devil, crying : don’t you see that I have left my watch

hanging above the chimee PP Xe 8 oa James did not wait for intvéaticn, but instantly turned the rein, and at a gentle _ pace, for he never was in a hurry, regained

AND HIS MASTER. 3 gained ...:.: the large castle? No, no. Among all the different possible lodgings which I have already enumerated,-choose that with which the present incident best corresponds. Meanwhile his Master continued ‘to move on. Now, however, the Master and the Man being separated, I know not to which of the two I shall give the preference. If you _wish to follow James, consider-well the matter ; the search for the purse and the watch may be so longand so complicated that for a considerable time he will not rejoin his Master, the only confident of his story, and then the amours of James farewell! If you leave him alone to search for the purse and the watch, and prefer the company of his Master, you may improve your manners, but at the expence.

g4 JAMES THE FATALIST expence of exnui, You are not yet sufficiently acquainted with this species of chara@tér. Their heads’ are not over and-above furnished with ideas. If they. say any thing sensible, it proceeds from. memory. or from inspiration. They have eyes like you and me, but ten to one if they sce. the greatest part of the time they are open. They -neither sleep nor wake. They are contented to vegetate, and this is their ha-. bitual fun@tion. The automaton pro-. ceeded in his usual way, looking back. from time to time to see whether James. was returning. .He dismounted from. his horse and walked, he again ‘mount-. ed, rode a quarter of a lease again | dismounted and set himself down on. the. ground ;_ his horses’ bridle hung. over his arm, aed his head resting upon his twa hands. When he was tired of Bhat at ee "this

AND HIS MASTER, - Q5 this posture he rose and looked. far and near to see whether he: could. descry James. No James was to: be seen. Now he lost all temper, and without. knowing. whether he was speaking or no, he éxclaimed: Ah the rogue! ah . the. - hound! the knave where can he be ? what can he:be doing? must-so much.

time be spent in recovering a purse and. a watch?- I'll bang him soundly, that. T will ! TH tan his hide for him! ° Then he fumbled for his watch in his: fob where it was not to be found ; and: | this was the consummation of his af-- . fli@tions ; for without his watch, his; snuff-box and James, he did not know what to make of himself. These were. the three grand resources of his life, which passed away. in taking snuff, look-; ing at the time of day, and. putting: questions to James; and these in all. 3 their

66 SAMES THE FATALIST their possible combinations. Deprived * of his watch, he was then reduced to his snuff-box which he opened and shut every minute, as | do myself when F am possessed with ennui. The quantity of snuff which is left in my snuffbox at night is in the diredt ratio of the amusement, or in the inverse ratio of the enzut 1 have experienced during the day. J beséech you, reader, to accustom yourself to this mode of speaking, which is borrowed from geometry, because I find that it has the advantage of precision, and it is a phraseology which I intend frequently to employ. Well now! have you had enough of the Master ; and his Valet not coming to us what-do you think of our going to-him! Alas! poor-James !. At the moment we are speaking of him, he

AND His MASTER, 97. he exclaims in a piteous tone: it was . then decreed on high that all in oneday _ I should be apprehended.on the highway for a robber, on the point of being - carried to prison, and accused of seducing a girl ! As he slowly drew near to the castle, not the place where they had lodged the ast night, there passed by, one of those itinerant merchants called pedlars, who accosted him: Good, your honour, any garters, belts, watch-chains, snuff-boxes in the highest taste, real tortoise-shell, rings or watch-seals ; here,. sir, I have got a watch; a watch, sir; acapital gold watch, double-cased, elegantly chaced, as good asnew..... I want one, replied James, but it is not-that of yours, I promise you, and continued his ~ route still ata gentle pace. As he went ¥ OL, I. HO along

08 JAMES THE FATALIST along he imagined that he saw the decree on high where it was written : that the watch which this man had offered: -him was his Master’s. He returned and said to. the pedlar: friend, shew me that watch you mentioned with the gold case, I have a notion it may answer me. Faith, said the pedlar, I should not wonder if it did ; it is capital, very capital, made by Julien-leRoi: I have but this moment got it; I had it dog-cheap, and you shall have a bargain. I like little profits soon turned ; but the worst of it with us is the length of time goods lie on our hands; these three months to come I shall not have such a wind-fall. You. appear to me to look like a gentleman, and I would sooner let you have a good bargain than another..... Chatting away in ‘this manner, the pedlar had laid . down

“AND HIS MASTER: . ‘90 down his pack; opened it'and produced the watch, which James instantly recognised without the smallest emotion of surprise; for he never was in @ hurry about any.thing, and rarely astonished. He surveyed the watch atten- tively: yes, said he aside to- himself; "tis the same. . .and aloud. to the pedlar: you are right, it is elegant, very elegant; ahd. I know besides’ that it is good:; .. then clapping it in. his fob; he. said to the pedlar : God be praised; my. friend.—How! God be praised ?— Yes, it.is: my. Master's watch.—I know nothing at all of your Master ;° the watch is mine, I have fairly bought and fairly paid for it’. . . and laying hold of James by the collar he. attempted to recover. the watch. James gets near his horse, lays hold of one of his pistols, applies it to the breast of the pedlar : H2 stand

100 = 3AMES THE FATALIST stand off, said he, or you are a dead man. The pedlar quits his hold ina fright. James mounts his horse and proceeds at an easy pace towards the. town, saying to himself: here we have recovered the watch, now let us see, after the purse... The pedlar shuts up his pack in great haste, throws it over his shoulders and pursues James, bawling, stop thief! stop thief! murder! help ! help! ... It was in harvest time and the fields were covered with labourers ; all left their sickles, crowding round the man, demanding, where is the robber ? where is the: murderer ?—~There, down there !——What! he who moves on so slowly towards

the city-gate '— The. same——Pho! you are mad, that is not the pace of a robber.—He is one, he is one; I tell you he has robbed me of a gold watch - - - The people

- AND HIS MASTER. 101 ple knew not what to think of it, the cries of the pedlar or the tranquil pace of James. I.am undone, however, my lads, added the pedlar, if you refuse me your assistance ; the- watch is worth thirty Louis if it is worth a farthing. Lend me your assistance, he is carrying off my watch, and should he clap spurs to his horse, Iam, sure I. shall never: see more of -it...If James. was not within reach of these cries, he had no difficulty however in seeing the crowd, -yet he never once thought of mending his pace. The pediar determined the peasants, by the hopes of reward, to pursue James. Conceive then a multitude of men, women and children, running with shouts of thief! thief! murder ! murder! and the pedlar following as hard as the burden on his back would ‘permit, crying, stop thief! stop thief ! H3 murder !

102 JAMES THE FATALIST murder!... They entered the city; for I recollect this minute that it was a city where James and his Master had lodged the night before—The inhabitants quit their houses, and, joining the peasants and the pedlar, all in concert set up a shout of thief! thief! murder! murder! and all at once over; take James. The pedlar darting upon him, James fetched him a blow that laid him sprawling, though he roared as vigourously as ever, knave! rascal! villain! restore my watch; you shall be compelled to make restitution, and be hanged into the bargain .. . .”. James, preserving the utmost compo sure, addressed the mob: which increased every instant. There is a magistrate of police in the place, says he,carry me* before him ; there I will demonstrate that I am no-rogue, and that very , probably

AND HIS MASTER. . 103 probably this fellow is one. I have, it is true, taken a watch from him, but that watch is my Master’s..: I am not’ unknown in this city. My

Master and I arrived here t'other evening, and staid in the house of the lieutenant-general, his old friend.—If I omitted to tell you sooner, that James and his Master had passed through Conches, and lodged i in ° the house of 'the licutenant-general of the place, it is because it never occurred to me before.—Take me to the lieutenant-general's house, said James, as he dismounted.—Away they marched in the middle of the crowd, all three, himself, his horse and the pedlar. They arrive at the gate of the lieutenantgeneral. James, his horse, and the pediar are introduced, James and the pedlar grasping 'each others collars. The mob remained without, HA ' All

104 JAMES THE FATALIST All this time how was James's Master employed? He had fallen asleep by the side of the high-way, the horse's bridle hung on his arm, twhile the aniimal cropped the grass around as fat ds the length of the bridle would permit. ; As soon as the lieutenant-general 'perceived James, he criéd, Hah! Is it you, James, my poor fellow! What brings you. back here alone ?~-My Master's watch ; he had left it hanging on above the chimney, and I found it in this man's pack; our purse, I forgot, finder my bolster; and it will be recovered if you give the command.— Be it.so decreed on high, added the " thagistrate . .. He instantly summoned his servants; and 'the pedlar, immediately pointing to a tall ill-looking | | fellow

_AND HIS MASTER, 105 . fellow newly admitted into the family, There is the man, says he, who sold me the watch. . ' The magistrate, assuming a stern aspect, said to the servant and the pedlar, you both deserve to be sent to the galleys ; you for selling the watch, and you for having bought it... to his servant, Restore this man his money, and instantly strip off your livery... to the pedlar, Make haste and quit the country, if you have not a mind to'be imprisoned for life. You are both embarked in a profession that leads to : the gallows.... Now, James, I must look after your purse... She who-had appropriated the money, required no gummons to appear. She was a tall handsome. baggage.—It is I who have the purse, said she to her master; but "ait

106 | JAMES THE FATALIST it was not stolen; he himself complimented me with it—I give you my purse !—Yes.—Possibly enough: but deuce take me if I recollect a word of the matter... . Says the magistrate to James, we had better sift this matter no fasther.—Sir . . . I caneasily see that she is handsome and obliging —Sir, J protest .. . Howmuch did the purse contain ?—About nine hundred and seventeen livres.--Ah! Javotte! nine hundred and seventeen livres, for a single night ! That is a great deal too much both for you and for him. Give me.the purse ... Lhe girl gave her master the puirsey who, taking out 2 crown : Hold there, said he, throwing her a crowm-piece, there is the-price of your services. You are worth more, I confess, but-from someone else than James, --] wish you twice as. mych every day, bit not in my house; do.you hear that ? . For

AND HIS MASTER. 107 For you, James, make haste, niount your horse, and return tg your Master. James bowed to the magistrate and retired, without making an answer; but he said to himself: The impudent slut! the gipsy! It was then decreed on high that another should lie, with her, and that James should pay for his entertainment ! Courage, however, James ; are you not abundantly. fortunate, in recovering your purse and your Master’s watch, at so little expence ? James mounted his horse, and made his way through the crowd, which had collected at the door of the magistrate’s house, But as he could not brook the idea that so many people should take him for a thief, he affected to pull the oe ~ watch

108 JAMES THE FATALIST watch out of his pocket, and look what o'clock it was, then he clapped spurs to his horse, which was not used to this discipline, and which set out with greater speed. James twas accustomed to let him follow his own inclination upon this point, for he found as much inconvenience in attempting to check him when he gallopped, as to urge him _onwhen he went slow. We imagine that ‘we gnide-destiny, while, in truth, it always leads us; and, to James, every thing which touched or approached him, his horse, his master, a monk, a dog, a woman, a mule, a crow, every _ thing was destiny. His horse then car“ried him full speed

towards his Master, who had fallen asleep upon the side of the high-way, the bridle of his horse hanging over his arm, as I have already mentioned. At that time, however, 3 the

AND HIS MASTER. - 109 the horse was attached to the bridle, but when James arrived the bridle was still in its place, but the horse had disappeared. A thief, it seemed, had come while he was asleep, silently cut the bridle asunder and carried off the animal. By the noise of James's horse his Master awoke, and his first salutation was, You are come back, you booby, you are come back? You are there, are you ?... With that he fell a yawning open mouthed.—Yawn away, yawn away, sir, quite at your ease, said James ; but where is your horse ?— My horse ?—~Yes,. your horse. » . The Master immediately perceiving thathe had been robbed of his horse, was preparing to fall'upon James, and bang him with the reins of the bridle, when James cries, Softly, sir, softly; I am not now disposed to allow myself to be beaten;

116 JAMES THE FATALIST beaten ; I shall take the first blow, but I swear that, on the second, I set off full speed, and leave you on the spot. . This menace of James instantly disarmed the fury of his Master, who said to him in a softened tone ; And what of my watch ?—There it is—And yout purse ?>—There it is also—You have staid a long while—~Not too long; considering all I havé done. Pray lis« ten attentively. I went away; I have fought; I have raised all the peasants of the country, and collected all the inhabitants of the town; I have been taken for a robber on the high-way ; I have been carried before the jus- . tice, and have undergone two examinations ; I have brought two men within an ace of being hanged; I have caused a valet to be turned out of doors, and a woman servant to be dismissed : - I have

"AND HIS MASTER, = ¥11 T have been convicted: of lying with a creature, whom I had never seen, and. whom -yet I was forced to pay; and here I am again' returned. —-And I, waiting your return . . It was décreed on high, that while you waited my

return, you should fall asleep and be robbed. of your horse. Cheer up, sir, think ne more about it. It is only a horse lost, and perhaps it is decreed on high that he is to be recovered—Alas, my horse! my poor horse !—Though you were to continue your lamentations till tomorrow you would not be a jot nearer the purpose.—What ‘are we to do ?}— Iwill take you behind me; or, if you like it better, we shall throw off our boots, fix them to my horse’s saddle, and pursue our journey on foot.—Alas, my horse! my poor horse! . They

112 JAMES THE FATALIST They resolved to set out on foot, the Master crying now and then, My horse! My poor horse! And James commenting on the summary he had given of his adventures. When he mentioned the girl’s accusation, his Master said to him ;—-So, James, you did not lie with the girl ? JAMES. | No, sir. MASTER. And yet you paid her ? . JAMES. _ Certainly! MASTER. T was once in my life more unfortunate than you. JAMES,

AND HIS MASTER. 113 JAMES. You paida gitl, I suppose, after lying with her ? MASTER You have guessed it. JAMES. What, though you should give me the history of this affair? © MASTER _ Before I enter upon the history of my love stories, you had better finish the narrative of yours, which, I sup-_ pose, are the'first and only amours of your life, notwithstanding the adventure with the maid servant of the lieutenant-general of Conches; for though you had lain with the girl, still you might not have been in love with her. - VOL, i I We

414 JAMES THE. FATALIST We every day lie with women whont we do not love, and do not lie with the women whom we do love. But... JAMES.. Well! but ?. What follows ? MASTER. - My horse! . . ; Do not distress yourself my friend. James ; put yourself in the place of my horse: suppose that I had lost you, and tell me if you should not esteem me more did you hear me erying my James! my poor.James ! . James smiled and said: Fbelieve I had got the length of the conversation of my landlord with his wife in the night, subsequent to my first dressing. I rested a little.

My landlord and his wiie were later of rising than usual. MASTER.

‘AND HIS MASTER, ~ 115 MASTER, I. can conceive that. JAMES: | When I awoke I gently drew aside the curtain and I saw my landlord, his wife and the surgeon, holding a private conference near the door. After what I heard during the night it was not difficult to divine what was the subject of this conversation. I coughed. The surgeon said to the husband’: he is awake ; friend, go down to the cellar, “we shall take a glass, it will make my hand steady ; I shall then take off the dressing, and we will consider what is to be done. The bottle was brought and emptied ; for, in the technical language, to take a . 12 glass”

T1060 - JAMES THE FATALISY - glass means to drink at least a bottle the surgeon approached my bed and said to me: what sort of a gate have you had ?+-not bad ;—your arm . Very good, your pulse is by no means bad ;- there is scarcely any fever. I must see your knee .. . Come, good woman, says he to my landlady, who was behind the curtain at the foot of my bed, assist as... The hostess called one of her children... It is not a child we want, it . is you; as wrong movement would. i us trouble for a month. Come . The hostess approached with joe eyes... Take this limb, the sound one I mean, I will take charge of the other. Gently, gently; nearer me, still a little nearer . .. Friend, turn your body a little to the right, to the right, I say, and then we'll have it .. ' F grasped the quilt of the bed with bath hands;

AND HIS MASTER, day ‘hands ; I grinded -my teeth ; the perspiration flowed down my face.—Friend, this is not very pleasant !—That I know to my cost—Yov'll do now. Good woman leave the limb, bring hither the chair and put the pillow upon it... it is too near... a little farther away... Friend, give me your hand, hold fast by me... Good weman come to the bedside and support the other arm... te a miracle... Landlord is there any thing in the bettle ?—No.—Go take your avife’s situation and let her fetch another... Well, let us ‘have a bumper... Woman, leave your husband where he is and come beside-me . . s The hostess once more’ called one of her

children—Sdeath! I told you already that it is not a child but that tt Is you we want. Down on your knees, pass your hand under the calf ra ... YOU

net se ce 118 §$JAMES THE FATALIST .. You tremble, good woman, as if you had seen a ghost; come, take cou~ rage .... your left hand under the thigh, here upon the bandage .. . Very well! .....The sewing is opened, the bandages untied, the dressing taken away, and my wound uncovered. The surgeon fumbles about it above and below, and by the sides; and every time he- touches me, he -says: block' head! idiot! booby ! -and this fellow pretends to be a surgeon! This limb a subject for amputation? It will last as long as the other, I'll answer for it.— Shall I be cured ?}—I have cured others before now.—Shall I be able to walk?— Yes, you shall walk.—Without crippling ?—That is another thing. Zounds, my friend, in what a hurry you are ; is it not enough that I have saved your limb ? Though ee do cripple, that is a small

“ AND His-MASTER.:> 119 asmall consideration. Are you fond of dancing ?'—Very fond, indeed.—Then if you do not hase so well -you . will dance better «... Some warm wine, hos+ tess. . Nos: one ‘me the cold first : ancther small glass, your. dressing will not be the worse’ for‘it.. he drinks : the warm'wine is ‘brought they. bathe the: wound, they dress it, they put me into bed, they’tecommend me to go to sleep: if I -can, they draw the curtains ; they. ‘finish the bottle. of wine which. they began, another i is brought, and the conversation is, resumed between the el deeeah the landlord, and the ana perk 2 LANDLORD. Will this be a tedious Boanes: sir? 14 SURGEON,

220 0 SAMES THE FATADIST SURGEON. Very tedious, indeed ... . Ihave the pleasure of drinking to. “your a8 health, my a fellow. LANDLORD. But how long may it be? A month J SURGEON. A month! Perhaps two, three, of four, for any thing that Iknow. The knee-pan is cut, the femur, the tibia, " Your health, hostess. . LANDEORD, Four months! .Mescy on me! Why was he received under my roof !

What the devil had ‘she to do at the door e SURGEOW.

“AND HIS MASTER.: | [2T SURGEON, ~ Abumper to my.own health, vith : your eae for I have ee hard, ay HOSTESS, My dui, so you are beginning again, This is not what you promised me last night ; but. patience; you will be in my power again. ace ue (LANDLORD, But: tell me what to do with. this man? Yet if a 2? al were not so bad !. i HOSP ENS If you Lead T will et ‘to ae a -bonage. ° : ee ae LANDLORD,

122 JAMES THE FATALIST LANDLORD. If you go one foot to the parsonage, J will beat you till you are. not_able to stir. . SURGEON, Why 0, neghboar’ My wife often goes there. LANDLORD. That is your affair. SURGEON. . My god - - daughters’ health ; how does she do? 2 HOSTESS |. , Very well, tL SURGEON, - Come, friend, a glass to our wives ; they are two good wives. foe LANDLORD.

. “AND HIS MASTER. 128 LANDLORD. Yours is more considerate than mine:. she would not have been guilty of such a piece of sada “eee HOSTESS, But, 1 my good friend, there is the grey sisterhood, SURGEON. Ah, mistress! a man, a man to be admitted among nuns! Besides, there is a difficulty in effecting this somewhat more formidable thani you imagine . Let us drink to the” mpne they are cigéod girls, HOST B 8 8. And what difficulty is'this ? SURGEON,

124 JANES THE FATALIST SURGEON. - Your husband does not,wish you to visit the parson ; and my wife does not wish me to goto the nunnery... But another glass, landlord, will perhaps suggest some scheme or other. Have you questioned this man? He is not, perhaps without resources. HOST. A soldier with resources ! SURGEON. A soldier has a father, mother, sisters, brothers, relations, friends, some one. under heaven... But let us take ano-ther glass; retire, and leave the management of this businessto me. Such

“AND HIS MASTER. 128. * Such was literally- the conversation which passed between the sargeon, the landlord, and the hostess; but what a different colouring might I not have given it by introducing a knave among’ these honest people? -

James might. have found himself, and you might have seen him, torn from his bed, and thrown upon the highway, or into 4 quagmire.—Why not killed ?—Killed, no: I might have called some person - to his assistance who.might hve been a soldier belonging to his company 3 but this would have turned the critics'. stomachs. The truth, the truth !—The truth you tell me is often frigid, common, and insipd, For instance, your last recital of the, dressing of James's knee is true; but, what interest did it impart ? None.—Granted. —In ad~ hering to truth, we. ought to imitate. Mo-.

€ 126° JAMES THE PATALIST Moliere, Regnard, Richardson, dnd Sedaine. Truth has prominent points which never fail to be seized upon by genius whenever it exists

| AND HISMAsTERS" 197 James the Fatalist, and of his Master ? ..+ The history of the poet. of Pondi+ cherry.—After the: usual compliments upon my wit, thy génius, my. taste, my condescension, and other discourse, of ~ which I do not believe a.word, though I have been in the habit of hearing it 1epeated, and perhaps-with sincerity, for twenty "years, the young poet drew a paper from * his: pocket. There are a few verses, he says, to me.—Verses —Yes, sir, and I hope that you will have the goodness to give me your opinion of theni.—Do you like to be told the truth ?—Yes, sir, and I desire to hear it from you.—Well, you shall hear it—-What ! are you such a fool as to. believe that a.poet would come to you in. quest. of trath-?--Yes—And 'veally to tell it him'?+-Most.assuredly ! with' out management ?—certainly ;° management

138 '° JAMES THR FATALIST agement if such cases is, at the best, @ gross insult ; when fairly interpreted, it means you are a bad poet'. and as I do not think you have nerves to hear the truth, you are but a silly fellow.— And do-you find that frankness always succeeds ?—It very seldom fails... I read the verses of my young poet, and I told him, Your verses not only are bad, but they prove to me, that you will never make good ones.=—I must make bad ones then, for I cannot refrain from writing -—What a dreadful curse! Do you know the disgrace, 'sir, into which you

ate about to fall ? Mediocrity in poets can neither be endured by gods nor men, nor by booksellers’ shelves; sosaid Horace.—I know it.—-Are you rich >—No.—Are you poor ?—Very poor.—And to poverty you are going to add the ridicule, which 7 : at

AND iis wAdreR.’ 2g attaches to abad poct you shall have "thrown away your whole Tife's ‘you will become’ old.’ ‘ Old;* poor; ‘and'-a “bad poet ! ‘Ant slr, What’a catillogeie I am sensible of it ¢ bit I ani constrain ed, in spite ‘of myself... (Here Jaines would have said : ‘but! this was decreed I have. _Lwhat 3 18 ‘their situation in’ fife? ? —They are jewellers Are they dis‘posed to de arly: ‘thing for'you !-They_ may.—Well; “go see- your telations, and propose to them to advance you'a Small quantity « of jewels, Embark fot Pondictialy, emake bad verses on’ ‘your voyage; on. your: ‘arrival, make a for‘tune. “Your fortune’ made, return here, and writé “ag: many’ bad verses ‘as, you ‘please, provided: ‘that you: ‘don’t: pint bar forit is ‘néedless t to ruin any body .. About’ a dozen” years after I gave ‘VOL. I. «K "the ‘

130 0 JAMES THE-FATALIST the: young.man.this advice, he again ‘made his.appearance; I did not recolJe&t him. I am,. sir,: says he, the person -Wwhom...:you sent. to Pondichery. I -have. ‘been. there,: and have amassed _.a fortune. of -an hundred thousand francs, Tam returned, have set about writing -Verses, and. here are some, which I have brought you... .- Are they still bad ?—Still—But. ‘yout lot. is. settled, and. I -have no objection to your persisting to write -bad_verses.—In truth 5 this is my — The’ eee ene. approached James's bed, thé latter did not give him tune to eal I have heard every thing, he says to him... Then addressing his Master, he proceeded .. . or rather “was going to ‘proceed, when his Master stopped him, He was tired: with walking =

TANDCHIS‘MASTER,.. 181 ing ; he sat down by the road-side, with his head tuthed “towards a ° traveller who was coniing up to ‘thé’ én* “foot, with the bridle

of his horse, which followed ig hang over his arm. You will viobablé suppose; ’ seal that this was the horse, which was stolen from . James’ Ss ‘Master ; 3 but you, are wrong. In‘ a Tomiance, that might ‘Hap"pen a little‘sdoner or a little tater, “in this, or in any other way; but I believe I have told you ‘already, and I again wos jend yf, repeat it, this i is not a romance.” The Master's dys’ to ‘James, Do you See this man?who-is Rost ‘dpitorns ? techs Wont Sa Hee Lite toe py es Lae -uhit gen or STA IM R80 a an dls. - Vo. oe : K 2 MASTERS

132 - JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. He. seems to havea good horse. : rests I served in an iifantry corps, and therefore ant not a judge, “MASTER wears the ey sie ama judge. an FAME SE. { ‘What es (i. MAST 5B K,.. jitig, OA What thea! I mean that you should go to this man, and propose that he ‘sell us the horse. ‘This is ‘my intention. eee "James.

AND- HIS MASTER: 1331 JAMES. _ [tis a very foolish errand, but J will go to. him. How much would ‘yougive him for the horse ?_ MASTER. I would go the length of an ae dred crowns... ..- James, after recommending to his Master not to suffer himself to fall asleep, went to meet the traveller 5 ‘ptoposed to buy’ his horse, ‘pita lot him, and brought him off, _—Well, James, said the aster, ify you 3 have your Pier sentiments T have mine’ too.. The horse looks well ; the mérchant' veil swear tO you, that’ he i is ‘free’ from | ‘faults 5, but, in ‘dealing’ about Aorsés, every San will jockey you if he can. K 3 JAMES.

134° JAMES THE FATALIST FA-MES.Ant “in » what will ‘then. not jockey you? +. Be MASTER. You shall mount him, and give me youre ge; Conceive, ‘them ‘mounted on. » hore back and James | proceeding : When, YT left home, i ig my mother, and 1 my godfather, had all I given frie something, each according. to. ‘his. meas. I had “in Feserve, ‘five - louis, of which John, , my € ‘elder brother -had yee ¥ tora - oe -madg, ma Sartiee Se ae

AND His "MASTERS: 138 made me a present,, when he set out on his unfortunate

} Journey to Lisbon wee (Heré’ James: began to ‘weep, ‘atid’ his Master to rémind ‘him, that this was de creed on high). .. It.is true, sir, I have said so myself an hundred times, re , yet I cannot refrai rota” crying Then James sighed and wept afresh The Master took his pinch of snuff, and fédked-at-his’ Watch to ste! what"oldleck it was. After taking his horse's“ bridle between his teeth, and. wiping his eyes with « : both hi is, hands, James .coptiguedery, wn to bees ads sieih os ‘trow _ 16) tasers sad apobiisen rod avi - With John’s five louis, what J. could raise, -and.the.; presents. of :my,r relations and friends, I had made up a purse, from which I had not drawn a farthing. I found ;this, treasure SET EEERE | tebe: say: you, Master 2,» +. KA MASTER,

136 JAMES THE PATALIS? MASTER. It was impossible that you cauld temain any longer in the cottage. JAMES. Even with paying. MASTER. But what took your brother John to Lisbon? JAMES. I think you are endeavouring to divert me from the thread of my narrative. Your questions have already cartied me the tour of the world before I have reached the end of my amours. MASTER. What does it signify, provided you speak and I listen? Are not these the two

AND HIS MASTER. 137 two important points? Instead of grumbling you ought rather to-thank me. os JAMES, My brother went to Lisbon to seek repose. John was a lad of spirit, and it is to this he owes his misfortunes: it had been better for him that he had been a dull fellow like me; but this was des creed on high. It was decreed, that a mendicant Carmelite, who came every season to our village, in quest of: eggs, wool, hemp, fruit and wine, should lodge at my father’s house ; that he should debauch my brother John,’ and that my brother John should assume’ the habit of a monk. "MASTER, So your brother John was a Carmelite ? JAMES.

138 JAMES THE FATALIST .c- : : ‘ pe RS A E.8.: Yes, : sir, and a bare footed Cat melt was: activ: e, hee, He vgas.expert ‘in wreading and writing, and from. his -youth-he was employed. in deciphering and‘in copying .old parch-, ments.., He

passed through.all the: de-. grees. .of;-fhe order,; he-;was- porter, butler,,gardener, sexton, assistant, stew ard and treasurer, in succession.: from, the Jine. which: -he was ..in he would. haye miade , 1a. ‘fortune, for. us. 2 all.., He. matriedy. and marnied, well, two of our sisters,and some other girls of the village, He could net psas through the, streets without fathers, mothersand children going up and actosting him, Good day, brathe? John; :hoyt. do. iyou! do, brother John? When he entered a house, it cee was

AND HIS MASTER.’ 139 was certain that the blessing of ‘Heaven’ entered with him, and that, when there was’ a daughter i in it; in two ‘months after ‘his visit, she. was marriéd: . Poor brother John! Ambition’: tuined him,’ The steward of ‘the house; to whom He’ was appointed assistant, was advanced in years: The monks. gave out, that . he had formed’ a bias of: -eubealig effect ‘this objedt, that he ‘this all’ the: archives into.- confusion, buined the ane cient registers, and forged ‘lew ones so that-at the death of ‘the old'sééward} the’ devil himself could. make ‘Heither t head! nor tail. of the: titles-of the’ conitunity: Was a paper at any time necessary to be produced, they 1 must: lose a month in: searching! for: it} anid: “after all,’ i¢ often could not -be':fotitid. The fax thers perceived the artifice -of brother John.

140 0-- SAMES THE FATALIST John and the obje@ ‘that he had in view ; they. took it into- serious consideration, and brother. John, instead of being steward, as he had flattered: him-. self; was. reduced. to. bread. and . water, and strict discipline, till he delivered up .to ‘another the key of his registers. Monks are implacable. When they had: drawn. from,brother ; Jehn all the! explanations which they, wanted, -they: made him. coal:porter: in’ the jabora-, tory, ‘where they distilled Carmelite’s water. . Brother John, formerly treasprer to. the order. and, assistant steward, now ‘reduced to a ¢oalmah !-: Brother. John ‘had spirit; yhe could ‘not, support this . diminution :of importance and splendour, and. only wanted: an opporanity of - with; drawing: himself, gis his state of hum#iation,..,; Pale ol bo digiss NONE Ie EAA, Ee At “ e

atin HIS MASTER: TA1 At that time there came to the house a young father, who passed for the wonder of the order, -both in the tribunal and in. the pulpit ; i his name. ‘was father Ange. He had fine eyes and a comely face, hands and arms of perfect symmetry. He was constantly preaching and confessing ; ; the old directors were forsaken by their votaries, who attached themselves to young father Ange. On the Sunday and grand festival eyenings, the closet of father Ange was sutrounded with male and female penitents, and the old fathers of the monastery. ia vain waited in their deserted cells. for their wonted . practice, a a circumstance at which they were exceedingly chagrined .. .... But let us’ leave,the history. of brother John, sir, and resume that of my amours, which will perhaps be more entertaining. MASTER.

442 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. No, io ; let us take a pinch of snuff; -Jook what o'clock it is, and proceed. JAMES. Well, I consent, since it is your wish . but James’s hotse was of a different opinion ; he all of a sudderi takes the bit between his teeth, atid Plunges into a quagmire. James in vain ‘squeézes with his knees, and holds the bridle short by the reins, the stubborn animal gives a sudden jerk, ‘springs | from the midst of the quagmire, ‘and flies like lightning to the’ summit of ‘an ‘eminence, where he stops short, and where James, looking around him, finds pean gibbet net _ Another

ag AND HIS;MASTER,. 1 Another would not have failed, reader, to supply the gallows with a victim, and thus to provide James.with. a subjet for some woeful discovery. Had 1} done so,. you : would, perhaps, have believed it; for there sometimes are more extraordinary accidents ; but the circumstance would not: have been true; there was no Beer on the pibber.— _ 7 aa. James ae his horse time to recover his breath, who descended tlie -hill of his, own -accord, regained . the.-miarsh jand- replaced James: beside. his Master, ‘who said to him: “Ah! my friend, what.a fright you have given me! I considered you as a dead man-. . « But ‘you are dreaming’; what -are . ae. -dreaming about ? . jaM ES

1440 JAMES THE PATALIST . JAMES... ' About what I saw up there. a MASTER. And what did you see ? JAMES. A gallows; a gibbet.— + MASTER... . The devil, you did! That. was a -bad omen ; but.recollect your doctrine, ‘If it was decreed on high, do what:you * will, you shall be. hanged, my good _ friend ; -and if it is not decreed oti ‘high, the -horse will be found to-be.a false prophet. .If this animal be not inspired he is subject to-cross.fits ; you must’ take care of him. After a few moments

AND His MAsTER: = 145 fhoments ‘silence, James rubbed his brow and shook his ears, as one natiirally does wheii he wants to dismiss -an unpleasant idea, and abruptly res siumes his narrative = The old monks -held a council and resolved, at all events, and by any means, to rid themselves of this. youngster, who had réduced them to ‘such a state of humiliation. Do. you know what they did?.... aie 1 are not attending, _ MASTER Attending ! I ath attending ; go on: ~ JAMES: They siborned the porter who was an old knave like themselves. This eld “rascal accused the young father of VOL. Tf. L having

HQ = JAMES THE FATALIST having taken liberties with one of .the devotees, in the parlour, and swore that he had seen him. — It might be true, or. it -might -be. false, who knows? A pleasant circumstance enough, was, that the next morning after this accusation was lodged, the prior of the house was summoned by a surgeon to satisfy -a demand for ‘medicines which he had administered,- and attendarice, -which he had given upon this scoundrel of 'a porter, in the course of a fashionable disease . . . Master, you: are not attending, and I know what occupics your ees ; Th wager it is s the gibbet.c-r MASTER, * Ecannot deny it, FAMES.

“anb His-Masten: "147 (DAMES. I have-eaught your eyes fixed upon my visage ‘do you: think: that & it fore Bodes: misfortune Po! on eke sada Gate MA ST ER, No; no. ca ME S$ ae . "Phat is as much as to say, yes, yes: Well! ‘if you'are afraid of tne we had soi oe ej wep ob. MA's STE Re a “Coin; James, you ine heart ; can 'e you

repose confidence in yourself? 2s Oe : : t eee - SAMES. “No; ‘sir ; who is. there that car trust himself > L% MASTER,

148 JAMES. THE FATALIST MASTER. ‘Every good man. Does James, honest James, not. feel a horror at cfime ? . . Come, James, let us finish this dispute, and resume your narrative. JAMES. In consequence of this calumny, this infamous slander of the porter, they thought. themselves entitled to play a thousand devils’ tricks, and: to commit a thousand wicked acts against poor father Ange, whose head appeared to be deranged. - ‘They then called a physician whom they bribed, and who attested, that the monk was out of his judgment, and that his native air would be necessary for his:recovery. Had the . object been to seclude or to confine. father Ange, the business had been soon

. AND HIS MASTER. : 149 soon managed ; but among the devotees to whom he had acted as fatherconfessor, there were some ladies ° of quality to manage. They spoke to them of their director with a pretended commiseration: Alas !. poor father Ange ! what a pity it is! he was ‘the glory of our community!——W hat is this that has befallen him ?—To this question they replied only with a profound sigh, and lifting their eyes to heaven ; if they insisted, they bowed their heads ‘and were silent. This mummery they sometimes accompanied with such exclamations as the following : O God! what poor creatures’ _weare! ... He has still some surprising moments . . . some gleams ‘of genius... It will return, perhaps, but there is little hope... What a loss our religion has sustained !....—In the L 3 | mean

Y 350 JAMES THE FATALIST mean time they were employed in undermining him with double industry ; they omitted no artifice. actually to bring father Ange into the situation to which they gave out that he was reduced; and they would have suc: ceeded had not brother John taken“. compassion upon him. How shall I tell you the rest? One night, when we wereasleep,we heard a knockat the door; we rose, we opened it to father Ange and my brother in disguise.: They passed the following day

in the house ; the next morning at day-break .they decamped. They set out with their hands full; for John, embracing me, said : T have married your sisters. . Had I re‘mained in the convent two years longer in the situation I once enjoyed, ‘you should have been one of the greatest 3 "farmers

AND WIS ‘MASTER... 151 farmers in the distri but every thing has changed, and this is ‘all that I can do for you. Farewell, ‘Jamies ; if the father and I are fortunate, you ‘shall receive some testimony of it. he then put into iy hand tlie’ five Louis which I have already mentioned, with five others for. the last of the girls in the village that he married, and who had just been. brought to bed of a fine boy, as like brother John as one egg to. another. x A STE R. ” Obs snieff bon opened iia bie ee replaced.) = And what took them to Lisbon? ~ JAM E'S, They went in quest of an earthquake, which could not happen without crush-_ LA ing

152 JAMES THE FATALIST ing them to pieces, swallowing them up, and burning them to ashes, as it was decreed on high, MASTER. Ah! these monks ! these monks ! ‘JAME s. The best of them is not good for much, | M A STER. I know it better than you, JAMES. Have you passed through t heir hands? MASTER. I shall tell you at another time, JAMES. But what makes them so bad ? MASTER.

AND HIS. MASTER. 153 MASTER, I believe it is because they are monks , -. Let us return to your amours. JAMES, No sir; we'll not return to them. AMASTER, Don’t you wish to make me acquainted with them ? JAMES. I still wish it;, but destiny, destiny is of another mind. Don’t _you see that I no sooner open my mouth than the devil interferes, and some accident intervenes to interrupt my discourse ? I shall not finish them. I tell you this is decreed on high. . MASTER.

254 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. Try, my friend. JAMES, But if you would begin the history of yours, pethaps.it would break the incantation, and then mine would proceed more smoothly.. ‘I have a notion that the one depends upon the other. Look yon, sir, I. think sometimes that I have communications from destiny.

MASTER. | ‘And you always experience the ad- . vantage of attending to them. “JAMES. Yes, I do.; witness the day. that I received the information, that your watch was on the-pedlar’s back ... The

AND. HIS MASTER,” 155 The Master. fell a yawning, and. as he yawned, he rapped his fingers upon his snuff-box, and rapping ‘upon ‘his _snuff-box, he looked as far as he could see, and, in looking abroad, he said to James ; Don’t you observe something upon your left. “JAMES. Yes, and I will lay you a wager che it is something to prevent me from continuing my history, or you from be ginning yours... James was right. As the object they saw was advancing to them, and they were travelling towards it, these two - opposite motions diminished the dise tance, and they soon were able to distinguish a carriage covered with black cloth, drawn with four “black horses with

156 JAMES THE FATALIST with black housings, . which. covered their heads and came down to their feet; behind were two domestics in black, and behind them two ethers, each upon a black horse, caparisoned in black. Upon the box a black coachman, with his hat slouched and encircled with a long crape, which waved over his left shoulder. The coachman was leaning his head to one side, permitting the reins to hang loose, and seemed less to conduct the horses than they to conduct him. When our travellers had come up along side of this hearse, James suddenly utters a cry, falls, rather than dismounts, from his horse, tears his hair, rolls himself on ‘the ground, exclaiming, My captain ! © my poor captain! It must be he, I cannot doubt it; see there his arms! .-- In fact, there was in the carriage a long coffin under a pall, upon the pall a sword

AND HIS MASTER. 157 a sword and aribband, and by the side — of the coffin a priest with his breviary— in his hand, singing psalms, ‘The carriage continued to move on, James following it with lamentations, and he followed by'his-Master with curses. James was informed by the domestics, that the procession was that of his

captain, who had died in the neighbouring town, from which they were conveying his body to the burying place of his.ancestors. When this soldier was, by the death of an officer, his friend, a captain in the same regiment, de_ prived' of the satisfaction of fighting at least once a week, he féll into a deep melancholy, under which he sunk at the end of a fewmonths. James, after having bestowed upon the memory of his captain that. tribute of praise, tears and regret, which he was bound to pay, made his apologies to his Master, again mounted

158 JAMES THE FATALIST mounted his horse, and they proceeded in silence. But for God's sake, reader, you will say, Where were they going? But, in God's name, I must answer, Do we always know where we are going? And you yourself, pray where are you going? Shall I remind you of the adventure of sop? His master Xantippe said to him, one evening in summer or winter, for the Greeks used the bath at all seasons of the year: AEsop, Go to the bath ; if there are few people we Shall bathe... AEsop goes out. On his way he met the Athenian patrole ; Where are you going ?-—Where am I going, replied ABsop, I can't. tell !—~ You can't tell? Walk to prison.—~ Heyday! continued Afsop, Did:I not say properly, that I knew not where I : was

AND HIS MASTER. - 15Q was going ?. I meant to go to the bath, and behold I am going to prison... James followed his Master, as you do yours, and his Master followed his again, as James followed him.—But awho was the master of James's Master? —Very fine! Are masters then so difficult to be. found. in the world ? James's master had a hundred for one, like you. Among so many masters he must not have met with a good. one, for he changed them every day. He was a man, reader, a passionate man, like you ; a curious man, like, you, reader; an impertinent man, like you, reader ;.a man like you, reader,. constantly proposing questions? And. why was he so much addiced to asking questions?. A. pretty ques-tion! He asked questions, in order to learn what he might repeat, like you,' reader... The Master said to James, You

160 JAMES THE FATALIST You do not seem disposed to resumé _ the history of your amours. JAMES. Alas, my poor captain | ! He is gone whither we are all going, and where it is very extraordinary that he did not sootier arrive. Ahi!...ahi ! | MASTER. But, James, yoii are crying, I believe ? ... © Give vent to your grief without restraint, because you may weep with= out shame; his death liberates you from the observance of those scrupulous decorums, by which, during his life, you were constrained. You have not the same reasons to dissemble your gtief as you had to dissemble your hap-. piness. The same consequences will not be inferred from your. tears that would

_AND HIS MASTER, - 161 would have been drawh-from your joy. Indulgence is easily extended to misery. And since you must, ‘op the present occasion, display either sensibility : or ingratitude, every thing well .considered; it is. better to reveal a’ weakness than to incur the suspicion of a ice. I wish your grief to be free thati it: may prove less pungent: -I wish: it: tovbe violent that it may. be less tedious. Recal to your fancy, even exaggerate, his merit, his penetration -in’ fathoming subjects the most. profound, i:his subtlety -in. discussing questions” ‘the most-delicate ; the solidity of ‘his taste, by which he was attached to the midst important; the fertility which he diffused over the most barren ; the dexterity-with which he. defended the accused, His ‘compassion. gave ‘him. a thousand times mofe. fire than interest VOL. - M or

162 JAMES THE FATALIST self-love can infuse into the guilty ; he -was only severe upon himself. Far from seeking to excuse the slight faults which escaped him, he employed all the malignity of an enemy in displaying them to himself with exaggeration ; and all the ingenuity of a rival, in detracting from the merit of his virtues, by a rigorous examination of the motives by which, perhaps’ unconsciously, he had been determined. Prescribe no other bounds to your sorrow but those which time shall assign. Let us acquiesce in the universal order when we ‘are deprived of our friends, as we will resign ourselves when it shall be pleased to dispose of us. Let

us receive the decree of fate, by which they are condemned, without despair, as when it is pronounced against ourselves we will accept it without resistance. © The i

AND HIS MASTER... - 163. The duties which extend to the tomb . are not the last duties which the soul pays to the departed. “The earth which lies ‘loose upon the new-covered grave; in time shall consolidate over the ashes of your lover; but your soul will pre-: serve all its sensibility.” : JAME 8, a This is all very fine, my good Master, but what, in the devil’s name, is it to the purpose? I have lost my captain; I am afflicted, and you repeat to me, like a parrot, a shréd'of consolation made by some man or woman, for some. other. woman who had. lost her lover. MASTER - ° I believe the author. was a woman, ° M2 JAMES,

164 JAMES THE FATALisT 3A M ES. J again believe that it was a man: but, be it man of woman, once more I repeat, what, in the deyil’s name, is it to the purpose ? Or do you take me for my captain’s mistress ? My captain, sir, was a brave man, and J, sir, have always been an honest lad. MASTER. - Haag who capes it is JAMES op igen What the devil then is ‘apiece « of cone: solation, whether::of man .or’ woman to some other woman, to the purpose ? Perhaps, by- my He eames hi will he induced to.cell-me. . oe ae MASTER.

AND His MAsTER.* 165 MASTER. No, James, you must take this just as it stands, JAMES. I will muse on it then the rest of my life, till I divine what it is; I will stick to it till the day of judginent.'. MASTER. 9 James, you" “seemed to listen with attention while I was réading, JAMES, Do you imagine we can refuse it to folly ? _M ASTE Ro Very well, James. JAMES, I had almost. burst’ out a linghing at the scrupulous decorum by which M 3 I was

166 JAMES THE FATALIST| I was constrained, while my captain was alive, and from which I had been freed by his death. MASTER. Very well, James ; I have then gained what I proposed. Tell me, was it possible to employ a better mode of consolation ? You were in tears : had I entertained you with the object of your

“grief, what would have been the consequence? . Just this, that you had ‘cried the more, and I should have completed your affliGion. I have beguiled your sorrow, both by the affectation of my funeral oration, and. by the little quarrel which had succeeded. Admit that just now the idea of your captain is as far off as the hearse which is conveying him to his long home, As i, we

AND HIS MASTER: 167 we proceed, I imagine you will be able to resume the history of your amours. JAMES. : I am of the same ‘opinion.—Doc-: tor, said I to the surgeori, do you live’ far off ?—A full quarter of a league at least.--Are you at’ all commodiously lodged ?—Very much’so.—~Have you-a bed to spare >—-No.—-What, © not though you were paid, and well paid for it ?>—Oh ! if you pay, and pay genteelly: excuse me. But, friend, “you don’t seem much in a situation -to pay. at all, much less to pay well.—That is. my concern. And should I- be well taken care of in your house ?—Extremely well. I have.a. wife who has been accustomed to -attend patients ‘all her life. Ihave a daughter grown up, who can serve every customer, and who MA ean

168 § JAMES THE FATALIST can.change you a dressing as well as’ myself.--How much may you. ask for board, lodging, and attendance >The surgeon, rubbing’ his’ éar the while, said’; -For lodging ... board. . tendance ... But who is to be responsible for the payment ?—I shall pay you daily—Aye, this is speaking ta the purpose—But, sir, I believe you are not listening. MASTER. No, James. It was decreed on high, that for this time, which is not likely to be the last, you should speak mene a attended to. JAMES. | When we don’t listen to the person that speaks, we either are thinking of nothing, or of soniething else than the subject

AND BIS:MASTER,- 169 subje@t of which he talks; which of the two is your case ? MAS T ER. ; The latter. I was musing ‘upon the information you received from one of the domestics, that your captain. had been deprived, by the death of: his friend, of the pleasure of fighting at least once a’ week. “Do you understand‘ what

this:means ? —_ SAM ES, : Cestainly. * | | . | MASTER. .. 0 | To me it is an enigma, which you will oblige me by ores JAMES And what the deuce will you make of it? MASTER,

170: JAMES THE ‘FATALIST MASTER. Not much. But you surely wish to be attended to when you speak? JAMES. You need not pare asked that question. MASTER. Vell then: in. conscience, I can’t answer for myself, so much is my head perplexed with this unintelligible circumstance. Extricate me from the difficulty, I beseech you. . JAMES. Instantly; but swear to me at least that you will give me no more inter- — Tuptions, MASTER.

- AND HIS: MASTER. 173 a4 te . MASTER. Come what will, I swear. JAMES. | The matter is, that my captain, a@ worthy well bred-gentlemen, a man of merit, one of the best officers -in the service, but a man somewhat hetero= cite, had met and formed a friendship with another officer of the same corps ; a worthy man too, well bred, accomplished, a good officer like himself; ‘but, like him too, of an 1 heteroclite turn of mind. James was about to begin the history of his captain, when they heard a numerous cavalcade of men and horses driving up behind them. It was the hearse they had seen, returning the way it came. It was surrounded... by the officers

172 JAMES THE FATALIST officers of the revenue? No.~By the troopers of the Marshalsey ?—Perhaps “it was, However this matter may stand, the train. was. preceded by the priest in his cassock and surplice, with his hands tied behind his back; the black coachman, the two black valets, with their hands tied behind their backs, ‘The person most surprised was James, whoexclaimed, My captain, my poor capfainis notdead, thank God ! Then James set off full speed to meet the pretended funeral procession. He had not advanced thirty paces, when the officers of the revenue or the troopers of the Marshalsey level their pieces and cry ; Stop, return the way you came or you are a dead man . . . James stopped short, and a moment

consulted destiny in his own mind; which seemed to say, Return the way you came; which he accordingly did.

AND HIS MASTER. - 173 did. His Master said, hey-day, James! what is the matter ? “SAME S.~ In faith; I know nothing of it at all. ° MASTER, And why? I know no more of that than of the other. | MASTER. _ ~ You will find that they are smugglers who had filled the coffin with prohibited goods, and who ‘have been betrayed to the Custom-house, ‘by the very rogues from whom they were purchased. ‘SAM ES. . ~ But why -the earriage with the arms of my captain ? . . _ MASTER,

174 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER | Perhaps it was a rape. They had concealed in the coffin, who knows, a wife, "a young lady, a nun ; it is not the winding shect that makes the corpse. JAMES. But why should the carriage bear the arms of my captain ? MASTER. Be it any way you please, but go on with your captain’s history. SAME ‘You still run upon this history! But perhaps my captain is yet alive. MASTER. What difference does that thake ? 2 JAMES.

AND: HIS-MASTER.. 175 | TAMES.. : I do not much like to speak of the living, because we are now and then put to the blush for the good and ‘the: ill we have said of them; for the good which, they destroy, and the bad which they repair, MASTER. Aét the part neither of ‘an: insipid panegyrist not of a virulent censor, speak of things as they are. JAMES,’ _ That. is not'so easy. Have we not our character, our interest, our taste, our passions, according to which we exageerate or extenuate ? Speak of things as they are! That does not happen perhaps twice in-a:day.in-the whole: extent of a great city. And is the hearer a whit

1760s SAMES TRE FATALIST _ whit better disposed than the speaker ? No.—From which it must follow, that’ hardly twice in the day, throughout a preat city, you are understood as you meant, . ee MASTER. _ What the deuce, James,.these maxims of yours go the length of entirely proscribing the use of our tongue and ears, and would. prove nothing less than that we should cease to speak,

to hear, and to believe! Nevertheless, speak you, as you feel, I shall hear you as [am oui and believe you as. I may. JAMES, ~ _ My dear Master, life passes away ace cording to the rule of gus pro quo, you have. the gut pro. quo ‘of love, the.guz pro qn of friendship, the gui pro guo of polities,

AND HIS MASTER. = 177 litics, of finance, of thé church, of the "law, of trade, of wifes, of husbands; MASTER. 2 . : eres I Poh! Leave these gut pro guo’s of yours, and understand that it is adting the part of a numskull, to involve yourself in a chapter of morals, when you have to .do with an historical fact. - Come, come! to the history of your captain? JAMES, If there:is almost nothing said i the world, which is undetstood as it was meant, there is another’ thing much worse, which is, that we do almost ‘no= thing, which is ‘judged according to the principle oh which it was performed. _ VOL. I. N MASTER.

178 JAMES-THE FATALIST MASTER. There is not, I dare say, a head under the heavens which contains so many paradoxes as thine. JAMES. And where would be the harm in that? A paradox is not always a falsehood. “MASTER. : True. _ | JAMES. ae My captainand I were passing through Orleans. The whole conversation of the town, turned upon an adventure that had recently occurred to a citizen of the place, called M. le Pelletier, a man penetrated with so profound a compassion for the unfortunate, that after having

And itis MAsTRR, «= 179 ing, by boundless charities, redticed a considerable fortune to a pittance barely adequate -to his necessities, he went about from door to, doos; seeking; from the wealth of others, that relief to the unfortunate which his own situation ~ no longer enabled him to supply; MASTER, — _ | And can you believe that two opinions could exist, with regard to the . conduct of this man ? JAMES, ; Not among the poor, but aimost aii the rich, without exception; considered him as a kind of lunatic, and his rela=. tions had well nigh got him interdidted as a prodigal. While we were fefreshe ing at an inn, 4 crowd of idle people had assembled round a

sort of orator, the N20) barber

180 JAMES THE FATALIST. barber of the street, :and were saying to him, You' 'were théré,; pray do You inform us how the matter .stood—Most willingly, 'replied this street orator, who wished for nothing better than an opportunity to harangue. M. Aubertot, one of my customers, whose house is directly opposite to the church of the Capuchins, was standing at his door, M. le Pelletier accosted him and said, M. Aubertot, will you give me any thing for my friends? for so he calls the 'poor, as you know.—Not to day M. le Pelletier; M.'le Pelletier presses him : Did yow but know in whose favour I solicited your charity! It is a poor woman who is just brought to bed; and who has'not a tag in which to wrap her infant—I cannét.—It is for a young and beautiful girl, destitute of bread and | without employment, whom your liberality,

", AND HIS.MASTER.. 181 liberality, perhaps, will. save. from ruin. —I cannot—It is for a workman, who depended upon, the labour of his hands for subsistance, and who-has just broken his leg by a fall. from-a scaffold —I cannot, I tell you.—Come; come, M. Aubertot, suffer yourself to be touched, and be assured that you will never have an opportunity of performing an action more meritorious—I cannot, I cannot, —My dear, my: compassionate M,: Aubertot!....M. le Pelletier, do not: tease "me so; when I have a mind to give, Ido not require entreaties... Saying. this, M. Aubertot turns his back, retires from the door into his ware-room; whither M. le Pelletier follows. From-the ware-room he follows him into the back shop, from the. back - shop' into. his "apartment; 'there M, Aubertot, fatigued by the importunities of M. le Pelletier, NZ gaye

182 JAMES THE PATALIST gave him a box on the ear... At this my captain got up abruptly, and says to the orator, And did he not put him to death ?—No, sir, are people to be put to death in this way ?—A-blow, zounds! A blow! And what then did he do?— 'What then did he do after he received the blow? Assuming a smiling

countenance, he said to M. Aubertot, This then is for me; but my poor... Here all the auditors burst out in a ery of admiration, except my captain, who addressed them: This M. le Pelletier of yours, gentlemen, is nothing but a beg- . gar, a wretch, a poltroon, a scoundrel, to whom still this sword should have done speedy justice had I been there ; and your M. Aubertot had been fortunate had he got off for his- nose and his two eats.—The orator replied: I see, sir, you would not ‘have allowed time for

AND HIS MASTER. ~ 183 for this insolent man to have acknowledged his fault, thrown himself at the feet of M. le Pelletier, and- presented him his purse.—No, surely!—You are’ a soldier, and M. le Pelletier is a christian; you have not the same ideas of a blow.—The cheek of every man of ho- . nour is the same.—That is not exactly’ what the gospel says.—My gospel is in © my heart, in my scabbard, and I know no other .;.—Yours, Master, is I know . not where, mine is decreed on high; every one appreciates injuries and favours in his own way, and, perhaps, we do not form the same judgment of them any two moments of our life, MASTER, What then, ‘cursed babbler, what then? x A When

184 JAMES THE FAPALIST - When James at any time ‘found ‘that his Master had. grown testy, : he was silent, fella musing, and frequently only broke silence, with a remark associated with something in his mind, but.as little. connected with the conversation, as. the subject of- a book in which you have | - passed a number of leaves. -Fhig was’ precisely his ¢ case- when he said, my dear: Master. ..:. MastER. "Ah! you. have at. last recovered, the use of your tongue ! a am heartily. glad of it.for both our sakes; for] was be-. ginning to get dull from not having your conversation to amuse me, and you from not enjoying the exescise of speaking. epee on then . | Jamés was a ‘second time going to be gin the history of his captain, when his horse springing cae out of the high

AND HIS MASTER, » 183 high road to the right, carried him across a field, the

distance of a full quar+ ter of-a league, and stopped short under. a gallows... Underagallows? A strange — disposition of the horse, this | to ‘carry his master to, the gallows! '. . . What ig the meaning of this, : said James? Can it be a warning of baie Se MASTER. There is no doubt of it, my ee your horse is inspired; but the plague is, that all these omens, inspirations,.and warnings. from on. high, communicated through the medium of dreams and apparitions go for nought, you cannot provide against the event. My dear friend, I: advise you to settle matters with your conscience, to arrange your little: affairs, and to dispatch as quickly as you can the history of your captain and

186 JAMES THE FATALIST and that of your amours, for I shall be vexed to lose you without having heard them. You may be as careful of your” self as you may, but what will this avail? Nothing. The decree of destiny, pro-nounced at two different times by your horse, shall be accomplished. Consider, have you nothing to restore to any per-_ son? Trust me with your last will, and be assured it shall be faithfully executed. If you have taken any thing from me I give it you; only ask pardon of God, and in the time that you have to live, be it longer or shorter, rob me no more. JAMES. . There is nothing in the past with which I can reproach myself, I have no account to settle with the justice of men. I have neither committed murder, robbery, nor rape. MASTER,

AND HiS MASTER,» 187 “MASTER, So much the worse; I should Sestics that the crime had been committed, than that it had yet to be committed, and for a certain reason. JAMES, But, sir, it is perhaps not on my own but on some other person’s account that I am to be hanged. | “MASTER, It may be so. JAMES. Perhaps Lam to be hanged after I am dead. MASTER. That may be too. AMES,

188 JAMES. THE PATALIST JAMES. Perhaps J oe be eae at all. ere -., MASTE Re Tha I much doubt. : JAMES, _... [tis perhaps decreed on high, that I shajl..oply. assist. in hanging another; who this other is, sir, God only knows, and whether he is

near or at a dis“tance? MASTER. Master James, you ‘sliall be hanged since fate intends it, and your horse has told you; but be not insolent: give over your impertinent . conjectures, and tell me, without acy the history of your captain. oe JAMES,

". AND HIS MASTER.': 189 JAMES. | Do not trouble yourself, sir; honest ‘people have sometimes been hanged, it 18 a gtd pro fue of j justice. MASTER. These gui pro gua’s are distressing, Let us speak about something else. James, who was a little heartened by the different interpretations which he had found for the prognostication of the horse, said: When I entered the regiment there were in it two officers who were nearly equal in age, birth, service, and merit. One of them was my captain. The only difference between ‘them was, that the one was rich and the other was not. My captain was the rich one. ‘This resetublance was likely to produce either | a very | ¢

190 JAMES THE -FATALIST & very strong sympathy or an inveteraté animosity: it produced both . ; . (Here James stopped, and this he did séveral times in thie course of his recital, as often indeed as his-horse turned his head to the right dnd to the left. Wher he went on again, he always repeated his last phrase, as if he had had the hiccough.) _ It produced both. Somie days they were the best friends in the world, on ~ ‘others they were mortal enemies. On these days of friendship they courted one another’s company, they entertained eachother, they mutually communicated their pains, their pleasures, their wants ; they consulted together upon their most ptivate concerns, their domestic interests, their hopes, their fears, their plans of advancement. Did they happen to meet next day? They passed with: out

AND HIS MASTER.. 101 Gut taking any notice of each other, or if they did it was in a saucy manner; they calléd one another sit, they ex: changed high words; they drew their swords, they fought. If it so happened. that one of them was wounded, the other threw himself down upon his’ companion, ‘wept, and tore himelf like a madman, he attended-him home and sat by his bed side tell he recovered. _Eight

days, a fortnight, a month after they renewed the quarrel, and we saw every moment two brave men... two sincere friends, exposed to fall by one another’s hands, and, of the two, the survivor would certainly have been’ most to be pitied. The extravagance of their conduct had frequently been represented to them. I, who had permission from my captain to speak . to him, I was accustomed - to. say, 3 _ But

1902 JAMES THE FATALIST But, sir, if you should chance to kill him!.. .. When I uttered these words, he covered: his eyes with his hands, and ran to his apartment’like a‘mad man. In two hours after, either his companion brought him home wounded, or he performed a similar service to his companion. Neither my remonstrances, ... neither my remonstrances, "nor those’ of others were of any avail ; there -was no remedy but to separate them. The minister. of war was informed of their singular perseverance in these two opposite extremes, and appointed my captain to the command of a place, with an express injunction immediately to repair to his post, and a prohibition to leave it. The other, by a similar prohibition, was fixed with his regiment... I believe this cursed horse 2 will

~AND HIS MASTER... —193: will make me mad . . ..Scarcely had the; arders of the: minister arrived, when _ my captain, under pretence of going — to thank him for the favour which had been conferred upon him, went “to court, represented that he was rich, and: that - his poor ‘companion: had the sartiel fight to the favours of the king ; that the post-;which he had recéivéd would -recompehse ‘the ‘services ‘of: his friend, and supply the deficiency. of | his fortune, circumstances which would communicate to him :(the captain) the most lively satisfaction. |As ithe -mi= nister’ had ‘no: other »intention. than to separate thesé two whimsical men ; and as hé could ‘not--help: being touched with this: génetous-conduct,: it was des termined-.... You-cursed ‘animal why won't you hold your head tight? ...: it , was determined, that my. captain should VOL I. fs) remain

TQ JAMES THE FATALIST reinain with the reginient, and that his companion

should go to take the,com< mand of the place.. Ne sooner were they susctbaatd than: they felt the loss of being deprived of each other's company ; they fell into a profound melancholy. _ My.'-captain asked leave of absence, that he might go and have the benefit of his native air; but, about two leagues off from te garrison, he sells +his-horse, puts on. the disguise of a peasant, and- walks towards the place where his friend: eommandéd.. It appears. that there was 'a scheme. concerted between them. He arrives . -. . Go then. wherever y ou please! .Is there still . another. 'gibbet that you wish to- visit? ..... Lake.-a hearty 'laugh, sir; this-has a very pleasint effect . ... He arrives ; but-it was : i - decreed.

AND HIS MASTER. 195 decreed on high that, nptwithstanding certain precautions which they had taken to conceal the. satisfaction they - felt on seeing one another again, and not to negleé&t the external shew of . subordination due from a peasant to a commander of a garrison, some officers who fell in with them by chance at this interview, and who were informed of their adventure, formed some suspicion, and went to give notice of it to the major of the fort. " He, 'being a prudent man, smiled at the information, but, atthe same time, did not fail to attach to it.all the im-~ portance which it deserved. He set spies.to watch the commander. 'Dheir first report was, that the commander went out very little, and that the peasant never went out at all. -[t.was,im02 pos

196 JAMES THE FATALIST possible that these two men could live 'eight days together without being seizat with their odd phrenzy, which asey returned. _ You see, seule how obliging I am; I might, by cracking my whip over the horses. which drew the carriage co.vered with black, assemble at the door of the next inn, James, his Master, the -revenue-oflicers, or the troopers of the Marshalsey, with the rest of their retinue, break off the history of James's 'captain, and exhaust your patience at my- ease ; but, in order to do this, I -miust.tell a lie, and I am not fond of -falsehood, unless when it serves some 'good purpose, or when I am compelled -toit. The fact is, that James and his Master never saw the hearse again, and, that James, always

uneasy. about the . pro

_AND HIS MASTER... 197, propensity of his horse, . continued his story. _ One. day the spies. ‘reported to: the major, that there had been a serious quarrel between , the commander ‘and the peasant; that, they. immediately . went out, the peasant going first’ and the commander following | him, {with te gret ; and, that they had | gone into a a banker’s in. the town, “where they. still were, oe 6 ee We afterwards learned, that, ‘enter taining no hopes of seeing one another again, ‘they had resolved’ ‘upon. a bitter contest, and that, sensible to the duties of the most tender friendship, _ at ‘the moment when they, were rouzed to the most savage pitch. of ferocity, my ap tain, who, as’ sI have told - you . ae tay cameee) |e “O 3° -edptain,

198 sams THE ParALise captain, Who was fich, had insisted upon his companion accepting of a bill _ of exchange for twenty - four thou-. sand livres, which might enable him to live in a foreign country, in case he (his Captain) was killed, protesting that he would: not fight till this preliiminaty point was settled 3 the other replying | to this offer; Do you think, my friend, that if you ate killed I shall survive you?... I hope, sit, you will not condemn me to finish our journey upon this whimsical animal... . They came out from the banker's, and walked towards the gate of the town where they were surrounded by the major and some officers, ‘Though this meeting had the appearance of accident, our two friends, or our two enemies, if you please, did nat mistake its

AND.HI§ MASTER, —_199 its objet. ‘The peasant let himself be known for what he was, They passed the night | in a private house. haps ter having snes his fie several times, parted with him, never to_ see him again. No sooner was he arrived an his native country tan he died. MASTER, Who told you that he was dead ? JAMES, But that coffin! and that carriage with his arms! My poor captain is dead ; soubtess he is. MASTER, But the priest with his: hands fied Aehind his back; and these officers of i O 4+ the $

"200. JAMES THE-PATALIST “the revenue, of troopers of the Mar“shalsey, and the return-of the procession towards the city! -Your captain is alive, I have no doubt ; but do: you ‘know any thing of his comrade? JAMES. . ’ “The history of his comrade is a beautiful line in the grand register, or the book which contains what is: decreed on high. MASTER, J hope rr James’s horse did not allow his Master time to conclude. He darted on like lightning, following the high road _ without deviating either to the right or to the left. James’ was out of sight, and his Master convinced -that a fe the

"AND WIS MASTER. ‘201 the road .would‘end in’ a+gallows,-was’ like to burst: his stdes: with laughing. “And ‘since James -and his~Master’are entertaining only: -when ‘together,-.amd are goog for.nothing:‘when: separated, Tikes Don : Quixote ‘and “Sancho,;- and Richardet and Ferragus; :a. citcum‘stance which the coatinuator -of Cet‘vantes; ahd .the .imitator -of -Ariosto “Monsignor Forti-Guerra, have not sufficiently: understood; _ reader,- Jet” ts have a little chat. till.'they are mene pean eee “You are ‘going to. we ihe hia. of | - Jamés’s captain. for’ a. fiétion, and -you aré wrong: I protest to you that pre. cisely: as he has recounted it to.-his - Master.was the recital-which I heard.of it at the Hospital of Invalids 5.1 do not - secolle& the year; upon St. Louis's . day

202 JAMES THE FATALIST ‘day, at the table of Monsieur S¢. Etienne, the governor of the Hospital ; and he who told the story, in presence of many other officers of the house acquainted with the fact, was a grave personnage, and one who had not at all the air of a jester. I repeat it, therefore for your benefit, as well now as in future; be circumspect, if you wish in this conversation of James and’ his Master, to distinguish the true from the false, the false from the true. You are now fairly warned, and I wash my hands of the consequences.—What a couple of very extraordinary men were these you tell me !—And is it this that excites yourincreculity? In thefirstplace, nature is so diversified, especially in cha_ radters and instinéts, that thereisnothing inthe tmagmation of the poet so extrava2 . pant

AND HIS MASTER. 203 gant of which observation andexperience do not present ts with the model. I inyself, who now speak,-have met with the fellow of the Mock Do&or, which, till then, I had considered as the most wild and entertaining of fi@ions.— | What! the fellow of the husband whose wife says to him, I have three childten"on my hands; and who answers, Lay them down then ... They ask fot bread, give them a rod !—Precisely. —The following is. the dialogue that passed between him and my wife: — Are you there, Monsieur Gousse }— Yes, madam, for I cannot be at two plates at once-—Where are you come from From the place I went to.— What have you done there ?—I have gepaired a mill that was out of order.— Whose mill was it?—I know nothing ‘of that; I did not ‘go there ‘to set the miller

204 | JAMES THE FATALIST miller to rights—-You are very well dressed, contrary "to custom. Why, under this suit, which is very. becoming, have you a dirty shirt >—Because I have no more than one.—And: why no more !—Because I have no_ more than one body at a time. —My husband is not at home ; but this will not prevent you from dining with. nse —No ; since I have given neither my stomach nor my appetite into your husband's keeping. —How does your wife ?—Just as she pleases, that is her concern.— And. your children ?—Admirably } 1— And the boy that has such fine eyes, 5 sO plump, so pretty a skin ?—Much better than the rest ; he is.dead.—Are you teaching them any thing ?—No, madam.—W hat, neither to read nor. write, nor to repeat their catechism »—Neither to read nor write, nor to repeat their

“AND HIS’MASTER. - 205 their catechism.—But. why so?—Because I was never taught any thing myself, and I am not the more ignorant for that. If they -have talents they will do as I have done ; if they: are” dunces, what I taught them would only make them greater fools. . . Should you ever meet with this original,: you need not.be of his acquaintance to: use:the freedom of addressing him.: Take him into a tavern, tell him your business, propose that he should go with you twenty leagues off, he will accompany you: after having employed. him, dismiss. him without a

penny ;. he. will return perfetly satisfied with his_treatment: Have you ever heard of one Premonval, a public teacher of mathe“matics at Paris? . He was a friend: of his... But James and his Master have perhaps again. joined company ; which do

206 «=: SAMES THE FATALIST do you chuse, te. proceed to theft, of to remain with me? Gousse and Premonval kept a school together. Among the numerous scholars who at+ tended, there was a young lady, called Miss Pigeon, the daughter of the celeDrated artist who constructed those two planispheres which have been _ transported from the Royal Gatden to | the Hall of the Academy of Sciences. Miss Pigeon went every morning with her satchel under her arm, and her mathematical instrument case in het “muff. One of the professors, Preamonval, fell in love with his scholar, and, in spite of the propositions upon solids, inscribed upon the sphere, she was got with child. Father Pigeon Was not a man to acquiesce with patience in the truth of this corollary. The situation. of the lovers becomes em

- AND HIS MASTER, 207. embartassing ; they hold a conference ; but having hothing, nothing at all in the world, what could be the result of their deliberations? They call to their assistance their friend Gousse. The latter, without ‘saying a word, sells his whole property, linen, clothes, instruments, furniture, books; raises a sum of money, hurries the two lovers into a ‘post-chaise, accompanies them most cheerfully as far as the Alps; there he empties his purse of the little money that remained, -presents them:gvith it, embraces them, wishes them @:good : journey, returns on foot, bepging'his way-as far as Lyons, where, by-painting the rooms of a cloister of monks, ‘he earned-as ‘much as enabled: him to retarn'to.Paris without begging. — gine

908 JAMES THE FATALIST gine that Gousse was possessed: of a great fund of morality :. No, indeed t be undeceived3. he had no more idea of it- than a horse.—Impossible !—It is true, however. I had employed. him im a piece-of business : I gave him a draft upon my agent for eighty livres; the sum was written in

figures. “What does my. man, but add a cypher, and draws eight -hundred livres !—-Ah, shocking !—He is not more dishonest when-he robs me, than generous when he strips himself :to serve his friend. He.is- an original, destitute of -principles. ‘The eighty: livres were--nét'sufficient for him; with a dash of the pen he procured the eight hundred, for which he had occasion. : And: then with what valuable books was I pre= sented ?—_Whiat, however, have..we-to do with these books ?—But James and Mo his

AND HIS MASTER. 209 his Master? James's amours? Ah, reader, the patierice with which you attend to me denionsttates the little interest you feck in my two heroes; and I am tempted to leave them.where they are... LT wanted a book of great value, he brought it me. Some time af= ter I had occasion for another valuable book, and again he furnished me with it. I wished:to pay for it; he refused to accept the price. I had occasion for a third; This time, said he, I cannot supply you. ‘You should have told me sooner; my doctor of the Sorbonne is dead— ca And what connection has the death of your doctor of the Sorbonne with the book that I wish to procure? Didy ou ’ take the two former out of his. library? Assuredly !—Without his leave ? Poh! VOL, 1. P what c

910 JAMES THE FATALIST what need had I of that, in order to administer distributive justice? I only displaced these books for the better, by transferring them from a place where ‘they avere useless, to another where they were to be used with advantage... After this shall we venture to judge of men from their conduct? But there is the story of Gousse and his wife which is best of all . .. I understand you, you have enough of it, and your opinion would be for setting out to rejoin our two travellers, Reader, you treat me like an automaton: this is not polite; proceed with James's amours; no more of the amours of James; I wish to hear the history of Gousse; now I have enough of it. Doubtless, I ought sometimes to proceed according to your inclination, but I must sometimes follow my own; not to mention that every hearer

- AND HIS MASTER. O11 hearer who allows me to begin a reci= tal, pledges himself to hear the conclusion. In the first place I have told you; but to speak of: a first place is to announce at least a second. In the second place then ... Attend-to me or not, as you please, I shall speak all alone.... James's captain and his comrade might have been tormented with a violent and secret jealousy. It is a feeling which friendship never extinguishes; Nothing is so difficult to excuse as merit. Might they not have dreaded a favour by which both of them would have been equally offended? Without being conscious of it they were desirous to rid themselves of a dangerous competitor ; they wished to smooth the way for some future opportunity. But how can P 2. such

212 JAMES THE FATALIST such an idea be entertained of him, who so generously resigns his command of the garrison to his indigent friend? He resigns it, ‘tis true, but had it been taken from him, he had reclaimed it with his sword. A preference among soldiers, if it does not confer an honour upon him who receives it, throws a disgrace upon his rival. But dropping all this discussion, let us say, that this was the character of their extravagance. Has not every man one of his own? This of our two officers was, for many ages, that of all Europe. It was called the spirit of chivalry. All that splendid multitude, armed from head to foot, decorated with different liveries of love, caperin upon palfreys, their lances in their lind, their visors up or down, regarding each ~ other with disdain, measuring each other "with the eye, launching mutual defiance, , “overthrow

AND HIS MASTER, °* 213 everthrowing each other in the dust, strewing the extent of a vast tournament with fragments of broken arms,‘were only friends jealous of the merit which was in fashion. These friends, at the very moment when they held their lances couched, each at the extremity of the career, and had pressed with the ‘spur the sides of their coursers, became the most terrible enemies. They ‘darted upon each other with the same fury which they would have employed in the-field of battle. In truth, our two officers were only two paladins born in our days, with the

manners of ancient times. Every virtue and every vice appears, and again goes out of fashion. Strength of body had its day, dexterity in exercises had its season. Bravery is sometimes more, sometimes less considered. The more common it'is, the PS less

QA JAMES THE PATALIST less it is the subject of vanity, the less it is the theme of panegyric. Observe with attention, the inclinations of men; you will find some who seem to have come into,the world too late. They belong to another age. And may we not suppose that our two soldiers had engaged in those daily and perilous combats, solely from the desire of finding the weak sidé of his rival and obtaining the superiority ? Duels occur in society under every variety of form; among priests, among lawyers, among scholars, among philosophers. Every class has its lance and its champions, and our most respectable and amusing assemblies are nothing but little tournaments, where sometimes they wear the livery of love in their hearts if not upon their shoulders. The more numerous the spectators the more.keen is : the

AND HIS MASTER, , 215 the tilt; the presence of the. ladies carries the zeal and the obstinacy of the combatants to: the highest: pitch, and the shame of being overcome - before them is almost never forgotten. But, James! ... James had cleared the gates of the city, traversed the streets amidst the shouts of children, and reached the extremity of the opposite suburbs, where his horse, darting into a little court, there occurred between the lintel of the-door and James’s head, a terrible encounter, in which the lintel must either have been displaced.or James thrown backwards. As you may easily imagine it was the latter that happened. James fell down with his head cut and senseless, He was raised up, and recalled to life with spirituous liquors; I believe too that he was let blood by the PA _ master

916 JAMES THE PATALIST imaster of the house.-—This person ther was a surgeon ?~—No.’ Meanwhile his Master had arrived and enquired after him of every one he met. Did you not see a tall thin person, mounted upon a pyed horse ?—-He has just passed, flying as if the devil were in him; he must have reached his

master’s house. —And who is his master ?—The hangman.—The hangman!—yYes, for the horse belongs to him —Where does the hangman live?—A considerable way off, but you need not give yourself the. trouble to go that length, for here are his people bringing, in all probability, the person you seek, and whom we took for one of his valets ... And who was this that spoke to James’s Master ? —It was an inn-keeper at whose door he had stopped, it was impossible to be — ’ mistaken. - He was thick and short like 3 a tun,

AND HIS MASTER. 217 atun, with his shirt tucked up to the elbows, a cotton cap upon his head, a kitchen apron round him, and a large knife by his side. Haste, haste, said James’s Master, a bed for this poor devil, a surgeon, a physician, an apothecary... In the interim they had set James upon his feet, his forehead bound up with a large thick bandage which covered his eyes—James! James!—Is it you, Master ?—~Yes, yes, look at me then. —I cannot.— What has befallen you?—Ah,. the horse! the cursed horse! I will tell you all the circumstances to-morrow, if I do not die in the course of the night ,..— While they were carrying him up stairs to his chamber, his Master went before, crying, take care, go gently, gently,zounds, you will hurt him! You, who carry his limbs, turn to ne right; you, who , 3 bear

218 JAMES THE FATALIST bear up his head, turn to the left... And James said ina low tone of voice: it was then decreed on high!... No sooner was James laid upon his bed than he fell into.a profound sleep. His Master passed the night beside his pillow feeling his pulse and incessantly moistening his bandage with anodynes. James was surprised when he awoke to find him thus employed, and said to him: What are you doing here? MASTER, _ Iam watching you: you are my ser~ vant when I am sick or in health, but I am yours when you are ill. JAMES. I am satisfied to.find that you possess the principles of humanity, it is not a _ quality

AND HIS MASTER. 219 quality which enters too much into the conduct of masters toward their servants, : MASTER... How is your head? JAMES. _As well as the

lintel against which it struck. . MASTER. Take this sheet between your teeth and shake your head bee aks vine do you feel? JAMES, Nothing, - the pitcher seems to be quite sound, — MASTER. So mack the better.’ You wish to rise I think ? JAMES.

220 JAMES THE PATALIST FAMES. And what would you have me do? MASTER. T would have you rest yourself,» JAMES. | My opinion is that we should kreak~ fast and set out. MASTER. And what is become of the horse? JAMES. I left him with his master, an honest civil man, who took him back at the .same price at which he sold him to us. MASTER.

“AND HIS MASTER.' 22% MASTER. And do you know who this honest, this civil man is? JAMES. No. ‘ MASTER. Til tell you when we are on our: journey. JAMES, | Why not now? What = is there in this? MASTER. Mystery or not, what necessity is there for me. telling you at this moment rather than at another ? JAMES. There is none. MASTER.

929, JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. Bat you must havea horse. JAMES. The landlord of the inn will perhaps cheerfully give us one of his. MASTER. Stay still a moment, I will go and see about this. ‘James’s master goes down, orders breakfast, buys a horse, returns up stairs, and finds James dressed. They breakfasted and set out, James protesting that it was unpolite in him not to pay a visit of civility: to the citizen, at whose door he had been almost killed, and who had so obligingly come to his assistance ; his Master, endeavouring to make

AND HIS MASTER. = 923 inake him easy upon the point of eti- quette, by an assurance, that he had handsomely rewarded the attendants who had carried him to the inn; James, pretending that money given to the ser- vants did not cancel his obligations to the master, and that it was such circumstances as this that gave men a regret and disgust at doing kind offices ; be-sides that, particularly as it concerned himself, it had the appearance of iigratitude. I know, Master, what this man will say

of me, from what I would have said of him, had I been in his place and hein mine... They had cleared the town, when they meta tall athletic man, dressed in a hat with broad trimmings and clothes laced at every seam walking alone, if you except two large dogs that went before him... James no sooner perceived him than he alighted from his horse,

224 JAMES THE FATALIST horse, calling out: It is he! and instantly threw himself round his neck. " The man, with the two dogs, appearing to be very much embarrassed at James's caresses, gently pushed him back, and said to him, Sir, you do me too much honour.—No, I do not! ’Tis to you I owe my life, and .I cannot sufficiently _ express my sense: of the obligations which your kindness has laid me under. —You do not know who I am!—Are not you the obliging citizen who gave me assistance, who bled me and who dressed my wound, when my horse... —It is true, I am.—Are not you the henest citizen who took back the horse at the same price at which you sold him to me ?}—The same.—James embraced first. one cheek and then the other; his Master laughed, and the two dogs came round snuffing, and wondering at a scene

AND HIS MASTER: P yy) 4 scene which they now witnessed for the first time. Jdtres after Kaving added to these demionstrations of gratitude, dbundance of bows which his benefactor did hot return andabundance of good wishes -which were coldly received, mounts his horse and says to his Master: I have 4 most profound veneration for this man with whose charaéter you must make me acquainted: MASTER. And how canie he; James, to Bes $6 venerable in your eyes ? JAMBS; . From his not attaching: any import ance to the services that he renders, he inust be naturally obliging and long, accustomed to the exercise of beneficence. ss VOL: ter & MASTER.

226 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. Why do you suppose this? JAMES. I infer it from the coldness and indifference with which he received my acknowledgments;

he did not salute me, he did not say a word, he seemed to have forgotten me, and perhaps, at this moment, he is saying to himself with a sentiment of contempt; This traveller must be very little acquainted with beneficence, and the exercise of justice must be very difficult to him, since he is so affected with it. .. What is there so absurd in what I say as to make you laugh so heartily ?.. Be it what it may, tell me that man’s name, that I may put it down in my memorandum book. MASTER,

AND HIS MASTER. Dy) MAS TER. Most willingly; write. JAMES. Well, say on. MASTER, Write ; the man for whom I entertain the most profound veneration... JAMES, The most profound veneration . . . “MASTER, Is... JAMES. Tks 22 MASTER, Tlie hangman of *** a Q JAMES.

{2 238 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES, The hangman! MASTER. Yes, yes, the hangman, JAMES. Can you tell me where’s the point of this jest ? MASTER. I am not in jest. Let us review your progress. You want a horse, by chance you address a passenger and the passenger is a hangman. The horse carries you twice to the foot of a gibbet, and the third time he sets you down ata hangman’s house; there you fall lifeless from his back; from thence they carry you, where? to an inn, a lodging-house, a common

AND HIS MASTER, 229 a common asylum. James, are you acguainted with the history of Socrates’ death ? JAMES, No, MASTER. He was an Athenian philosopher. It is long since it was dangerous to aét the part of a philosopher among fools. His fellow citizens condemned him to drink hemlock. Well! Socrates ated as you have done; he used the executioner, who presented it, with as much politeness as you did. James, you are a sort of a philosopher you'll confess. I know well that this 1s a class of men extremely obnoxious to the great, ta whom they will not pay homage; to magistrates, whose office it is to prate those prejudices which it is the object of philosophy to a3 destroy;

230 JAMES THE FATALIST destroy; to priests who seldom see them at their

altars; to poets, a race of men destitute of principle, and who foolishly consider philosophy as the bane of the fine arts, without recollecting that even those among them, who indulge in the severe species of satyr, are only flatterers; to. the great body of the people in fine, who are the slaves of the tyrants who oppress them, of the.knaves who deceive: them, and of the buffoons by whom. they are amused. Then you see I am. aware. of the danger of. your profession: and-of:the.importance of the confession; that. I-desire you to:make, but! I'shall: net abuse your. confidence. James, my; friend, you are a philosopher, Tiam concerned about you, and if.we.are per~ mitted to read ithe future in the!present,. oF if: what is decteed) on Itigh 1s ewer: revealed to men oe before the evedt take

AND HIS MASTER, 931 takes place, I presume that your death will be philosophic, and that you will put on the noose with as good a grace as Socrates received the cup of hemJock. JAMES, Master, a prophet could not speak more to the purpose; but, fortunately !... MASTER. You are not credulous ; a circumstance which begins to confirm my presentiment. JAMES, And do you believe it, sir? MASTER. Ido; but I do not believe it will take place without some just cause. Q 4 JAMES.

982. JAMES THE FATALISE JAMES. "And what cause? — MASTER. Least said is soonest mended. JAMES. ~ ‘What of your presentiments ? MASTER. I laugh at them; but, I confess, I joi trembling to my mirth. There are some of them which have such a striking character! We have impbibed these stories so early! If your dreams were realized five or six times, and if you should chance. to dream that your friend was dead, you would go. ta his house early in the morning, to see whether he was or not. But the presenti

. AND HIS MASTER. ; 932 sentiments, the influence of which it is impossible to resist, are those especially which occur at the. moment when the _ thing is passing at a distance, and which. haye a symbolical cast. JAMES. You are sometimes. sa profound i so sublime, that. I do not understand. you. Can't yqu illustrate « this by

qn: example ? MASTER. - There is nothing easier. A woman live ed in the country with, her husband who was fourscore years. of age, and. afflicted, with the gravel. The husband left.the wife and came to town, to undergo an operation. ‘On the evening in which the operation % was to be performed, he wrote to his wife 5. “.

Soe = yanens Tre FéTAsrer ceive this: ‘etter, I shall‘ be under-the linife of brother Cosmo.”.. . You Have seen those marriage rings which -sepaTate into tworparts; upon: each of which the names of husband‘amd- wifé are engtaved. Well! the woman had one of these upon her finger when she opened’ her, husband’s' letter. ~ At’ that instant-the- two: halves: of the: ring: se+ parated ;- that with her own‘tlame upon it remained on her finger, that: with her husband's fell broken upon the letter which she was reading ... Tell me, James, Do you think tliat there’ is any head ‘sufficiently strong, “and ‘any mind sufficiently” firms, not ‘to Be more or less shaken by such aii ‘incident, in’ such circumstances? Of ‘ course, the woman thought that he was dead. -Her agonies lasted till the” next day, when net pusnane wrote lier, that‘le Had ‘got well

ANDsHIS-MASTER. 235 well, over, the-.operation; that. he wit. out of danger, and that he; flattered-himw self with the prospect of embracing her before the.end of: ie ‘month. ‘J AMES: 7 otR And did he in fact embrace her? 'M ASSTINE:R, © °° Yes. | TAMBES,.. eo I. “pst thie question,, because I. have; remarked, that destiny, 1s; often, capriycious.: You would say one moment, that it would-be found:to be false, and you. discover-the next, that sit: has. spoken- the .truth,. ‘Then,, sir; you think there is some symbolical presentiment which applies to my case ; and, in spite jets 2 of

236. JAMES THE PATALIST of yourself, you believe’me threatened’ with.a philosopher’s death. I . MAST EB. 3 I confess I do: but, in order to a rid of this gloomy: idea, cannot you. a JAM ES. oan sieges “wistdle es” Resume. the history of seh amours? James resumed the history of his amours, We had left him, , hagak

with. the ss ; iiine weak” oe ~ [am afraid you will be troubled with _ your knee for more than one i cay: to! come, aie oe JAMES,

SAND HIS MASTER. . 239 a ME: 8. “Te will trouble me precisely the ‘pes tiod which is ‘decreed on high ; but of what consequence is that at present ? SURGEON. At so much a day for board, lodging, and attendance, :it will make a consierable sum. Tae ee: Doétor, the matter is not what sum it will amount fo Yor the whole time, but how much a day 7" — SURGEON, Five and: twenty sous; would that be too much ?. JAMES,

258 JAMES THE (FA TALIST J a M ES: A great deal too. much. Come, come, -dogtor, I am a poor ¢ devil ; 3 so.let us " sttike off one half, and devise some plan as fast as possible to get me transported to your house. . SURGEON. ~ - Twelve-sous and a half ; that is not much: you will surely make it ‘thir teen? : JAMES, | Twelve sous and a half; thirteen SOUS... Agreed. . SURGEON, | _-And you are to pay daily.? JAMES. That is the bargain. 8S U R

AND HIS: MASTER, 239 SURGEON, It is, you must know, ‘because 1 have a vixen of a wife who does not understand raillery. JAMES. Well, well, doctor, .get me transported: with ‘all convenient speed=to this vixen of a wife of yours, SURGEON. A month, .at thirteen ‘sous .a day, is nineteen livres:ten sous: -you:will-make it the net twenty livres? JAMES, “Twenty. livres ; be it so, SURG EB 0.3 ON. You wish : to be- well. ene well attended; speedily cured, Besides lodging,

Bad ~ saMns SHE FATALIST ing, board and attendance, there will, perhaps, be medicines, linen ; there will be ; ee ~ * JAMES: _ What now ? SURGEON. In faith, the whole wilt be well worth four and twenty livres. JAMES. Done, for the four and twerity ; but ho more of your amendments: SURGEON. A month at four and twenty livres ; two months will be forty-eight livres; three months will be seventy-two. Oh ! how pleased miy wife would be if you would deposit, at your entry, the one half of

these seventy-two livres ! JAMES

AND His MAsTER: > 241 J AMES: i consent. - u RGEON. Stie would be stili better satisfied JAMES. mia were to pay for the quater I shall do i it. . James preceeded The sutgeon went to find miy host arid hostess ; informed them of oiir atrafigerient, and the 1 next thomént thé husband; thie wife; and the childieii; assenibled round miy bed; -with 4 serétie air? they madé endless énquites after -my health arid my knee; éxtolled their neighbours, the suigeoni dnd his wife, expressed the miost arderit wishes for rny -Welfate; the modst polite VoL: 1. R affa

242 JAMES THE. FATALIST affability, an interest, an eagerness to serve me! nevertheless, the surgeon had not informed them that I had money ; but they knew the man. He was to take me to his house, and they guessed that it was not fot nothing. I paid what I owed these people, and made little presents to the children, which their father and mother did not. allow to remain long in their harids. This was in the morning. My, host went out.to the fields ; 3 the hostess. shut the door behind her, and went. away. The children grieved, and, dissatisfied at ber ing. plundered, disappeared ; and when I came to-be. taken out of bed, dressed, and adjusted upon my litter, there was _ nobody at-hand but the doétor, who fella crying with all his might, though there was nobody, within hearing. ‘MASTER,

“AND HIS MASTER. 243 MASTER. And James, who is fond of speaking to himself, probably observed, Never pay before hand, if you do not wish to be ill served. JAMES, No, my Master; this was no time to moralize, but rather a time to fall into a passion, and:to swear. [lost alf temper ; I swore; afterwards I was reduced to moralize; and, while I was moralising, the doctor, who had left me alone, returned with two peasants whom he had hired to transport me, and at_ my expence, a circumstance of which he did-not allow me to remain ignorant. These men ‘discharged all the offices hecessary to my installation, upon a kind of litter, which théy made with a blanket stretched upon poles, R 2 MASTER,

244 |$JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. " God ‘be pfaised, you have now got into the surgeon’s house, and fallen in love with the doctor’s wife or daughter. JAMES, T suspect, my Master, that you are mistaken. MASTER. And you imagine that I should pass three months in the doctor's house -without. hearing one werd of your amours! Ah! James, that is impossible. Omit, I beseech you, both the description of the house, and the character of the doctor, the humour of his wife, and the progress of your cure ; leap, leap over all that. To the point, let us proceed to the point: suppose ; your

' AND HIS MASTER. 245 your knee almost well, yourself in good health, and i in love, JAMES. I am in love then, since e you insist upon knowing. MAS TER. - And with whom are you in love.?. JAMES. A tall brown girl, of sixteen, perfectly handsome ; with large black eyes, little mouth, like vermillion, beautiful arms, pretty -hands!.. Ah! my Master, what pretty hands. . - Those very hands eee a MASTER. You imagine you hold them still. R3 JAMES.

246 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES. Those very hands have you taken, and held many a time by stealth ; and it only depended upon them, that you ‘might not have done with her whatever you pleased. MASTER, "Upon my faith, sams, I did aot eXpect that. : DAMES, No more did I. MASTER. -. Refleét upon it as much as I tei T can recolleét neither the tall brown girl, nor the pretty hands. Endeavour to explain yourself.” JAMES,

“AND HIS.MASTHR.” - 247 JAMES." ; I agree; but. it is'upon condition that we return directly back again to the pause: of the sungeon. ‘MASTER I? Do-you believe ‘that i it was dscreedon high ae Y sae SAMES. s wan) ae; OES You yourself must show me - that 5 but it is decreed on high that < va piano, va sano, haat : ae rot eet ise ee kee ue Sada as A ONG cee i 3 + OS Mt, A 3 r B R | Mw enn ara And that gui va. sano; va. a loptang, and I should jike much to get there.: bate nove re bebe ht . bie ‘AM 5 ee eh ky Weal, what have’y you. iesoregte to, do? g MASTER,

246 JAMES THE FATALIST. MASTER. - Whatever you please. JAMES, | Hf so, conceive us in the house of the surgeon; it was decreed on high that we should return. The doctor, his wife, and his children, con“trived so well to drain my purse, by every species of petty. theft, that they had at last succeeded. The cure of my. knee appeared to be considerably advanced, without being so in reality: the wound was pretty nearly closed ; I was able to go abroad with ‘the assistance of a ctutch, and I hadstill eighteen francs remaining. ‘No people are so fond of speaking as stutterers ; none so fond of walking as, cripples. One day .in .autumn, upon a fine afternoon, I intend3 ed

. AND HIS MASTER. 249 ed along walk ; from the village -where T lived to the next,” “the: distance = about two i ace! MASTER. x And what was s the name of: this village ! ? JAMES, | Should I name it, yau would know the whole matter. When I arrived - there, I went into a tavern, rested myself, and took some refreshment; day began to fall, and I was preparing to sét out for my lodging, when, from the house in which I was, f heard a woman uttering piercing. cries. She was sitting upon the ground, tearing her hair, and, pointing to the fragments of a large pitcher, said; I am undone! I am undone for a month to come! and, in that

250 JAMES THE FATALIST that time, who will support my poor children? The intendant, who has.a heart harder than flint, will not :bate me a single sous. How unfortunate | am! I am ruined! Iam ruined!... Every body lamented her ‘situation ; nothing was to be heard around her but, Poor woman! Yet no one put his hand into his pocket. J approached her without céremony, and’ said, Good woman, what. has befallen you? ——What has befallen me! don’t - you see? -I was sent to purchase a pitcher of oil; I made a false step, fell, my pitcher is broken to pieces, and there is the oil it contained . . . At this'monient, the woman’s little children came up. They were almost naked, and the wretched garb of the mother shewed all the misery of the family: The mother and the children began a crying. Such

AND HIS ‘MASTER, 28T Such as I am, ten times less would have’ been sufficient to affect me; my bowels were moved with compassion, the tears started into my eyes, I asked the woman in a faltering tone, what! was the value of the oil in the pitcher? What is the value, replied she, raising her hands? Nine livres ; more than I shall be able to earn in a month... Instantly untying my purse, and throwing her two crown pieces, Hold, said I, there are a dozen... and, without waiting for her acknowledgment, I . took the road to the village. om | MASTER. James, you here ‘performed a noble action, | JAMES, I did a foolish one, begging your pardon. I had not proceeded an. hundred

252 JAMES THE FATALIST ‘dred paces from the village, when I said so to myse#. Before I was half way, I repeated it. Arrived at the house of my surgeon with my pocket empl felt i it ‘still worse, MASTER. You may have been right, and my praises were then as misplaced as your compassion ... No, no, James, I persist In my first judgment, and it is, for" getting’ the necessity of your own situation, that constitutes the principal merit of your action. I perceive the consequences; you are going to be exposed to the inhumanity of the surgeon and his wife ; they will turn you out of doors ; but, though you had died at their door on a dunghill, upon that dunghill you should have been satisfied . with your conduct. JAMES.

-AND HIS MASTER: - 259 - JAMES. My Master, I have scarcely so much courage as that cores to. I’ jogged along with much ado; and; since I must confess it; regretting my two crowns, which were goie without .the possibility of recovery, and spoiling, by my regret, the action I had performed: I was at an equal, distance from the. two villages, and day was quite gone; ‘when three ruffians sprung from: the thicket by which the road was skirted; rummaged my pockets, and were astonished to find about me so little mo- . ney as there was. They had reckoned upon a richer booty; seeing the charity I had bestowed at the village; they had imagined that he wha, coiild so easily give away a half louis, must have a score of them behind. Enraged at ; finding

052 JAMES THE FATALIST finding their hopes disappoined, and having exposed themselves to the danger of getting their bones broken upon a scaffold for a few halfpence, should T inform against them, and should they be seized and convicted upon my evidence, they hesitated whether they should not murder me. Fortunately they heard some noise, and took to their heels, and I came off for a few contusions which I received in the fall, and while they robbed me. The ruffians having retired, I proceeded. I regained the village as well as I could, and arrived, at two in the morning, pale and exhausted; the pain in my knee greatly increased, and aching in — different places from the blows I had sustained. The doctor . .. Master, what is the master with you? You 2 ei grind

“AND HIS MASTER. 1 258° "grind your teeth ; you shake.as if you were in piece of an enemy. MASTER. Soin fact] am. My sword inmy hand, Trush upon your robbers, and take vengeance for the injury you have suffered... Tell me then, how. he,- who is the author of the grand fegister, could have. decreed, that. such should be the reward. of a generous action? Why even I, who. am a miserable compound of. defects, espouse your cause, . while he who, ‘with tranquillity, has. seen’ you, attacked, knocked’ down, mal-treated, tr odden under foot ; he who is denomi-=: nated the assemblage of all Tene {; JA ME 8."Hugh; bushy! Master ; ; what’ you now. say savours.of fire and brimstone. se RE MASTER,

236 JAMES THE FATALIST 7 MASTER, What are you looking at? JAMES: Fam looking to see if there is ho pert gon round us who could hear you . The doétor felt iny piifse; and found "that I waé feverish. I went to bed withGut mentioning ity adventure,. musing upoit my couth, having to déal with two souls; great God! what souls! without 4 single sous, arid firmly expecting, that next day, when I awoke; I should be dunned for the pricé whicli liad been stipulated to be paid every ‘Here the Master thtew his arms roand the servant’s neck, Exciting a poor James ! what are you to do? What

-QOND HIS: MASTER.: 257 What is to become of you? Your situation terrifies me. . JAMES. Cheer “P» DET, here I am. ae MASTER 4 didn not:thihk of that sI was jut ‘now by Your side in the doctor's housé, at the momlerit. you awoke; ‘andawhén they came to ask you for hen thy RO oT AMES 0 ua eae in life we do not res cat what to rejoice,. nor. at, what to grieve. Good produces evil, and evil produces good, ‘We: filcoeet in’ the ‘atk’ Subje to What is ieirhea's on ‘high, equally frantic in our wishes, in our joy, and ‘out _ affliction, Wheii I ey I often discover that Tam afoul: / x TOL. 1. 7. ee MASTER, ~

28 JAMES: THE: PATARGT | MASTER. And when you soa JAME &. Eenee: I find also that 1am a fool; yet I cannot help weeping or laughing and it is this that enrages. me. I have an hundred times endeavoured .. : I = ‘not shut: oy sd the whole night. MASTER. No, no, tell me what 1 have ac BORE, 272 ieee oats JAMES, To disregard every thing that happens. Ah! could I but have succeeded! x = — MAST ER ‘What should you have gained by it? : «SAMES.

s 4. “AND HIS MASTER, — 259. JAMES, Bo ey 3 I should havé tid’ myself of care, -no longer have wanted dny thing, rendered myself completely my own master, and. been as well with my head laid upon a stone at the corner of 4’street a8 upon 4 downy pillow, Such I sometimes ain; but the devil is that it does not continue, and though firm and steady as a tock, upon. great occasions it ofteri happens that a slight contradiction, a trifle, disconcerts me, till I exhibit the most ex-: travagant. expressions of rage: I have: given up this, I have adopted the plan of being coritented. with: my -situation: whatever it is, and. I have found; upos a little reflection, that it comes nearly td. the same thing, and then T add, of what: consequence isit how weate? This isa : Ee eS kind

$60: JAMES. THE FATALIST kind of resignation F more easy and more convenient. Sogn asin MASTER, With: git to its being more con‘veeient this is Certain. ee a ere Cm e thei imorning the surgeon drew my. curtains, nnd. said: Come

my friend, your knee, for. Iam obliged to go from homez+Doétor, teplied I, in a piteous ten', Lam drowsy.—So much the better, itis a:good sign.—Alldw me to-sleep, I don't care for being dressed.«-There won't be much harm though you are not, sleep on... -—Saying this, he draws niy curtains, but I cannot sleep. An hour after thishis wife drew my- cuttains, and. said, Come my 'friend take your toast and tea:—-Madam, said Tin a piteous tone, I feel no appetite.—Eat, cat,

AND-HIS 'MASTER. ° 261 eat, you shall-pay'neither more noriless, = don't chiuse to' eat.—-So° nmch* the 'better; this'will serve: for the 'children and:me. - With this sheagain draws thy curtains, callpher children: who. falloh and dispatch' ray: tea aeiditbast "1 § 2 _ Reader, should:I 'here make a piatise, and resume-the history of the tian 'with the single shirt, because'he liad! only offe body: at'atime; I would: faii Know what you! weuld: think? 'You -wilk 'say. ehat 1 have involved . myself"in a dilemsna; "as Voltaire! would say;.or valgarly have got 'into-ah'alley;. from: whigh¢} know-'iét Jhow -tcvescape;:and that Ihave récougse t6:.a story invented merelycforcamasd'ment} in-order to:gain: tine and tocdewise soine. means. 'of extricating myself fiom: that.'which havescbeguns: dn ttuth,.-Teader, you arei mistaken supon 3 3 every.

262 JAMES THE FATALISTI every point; I know very well how James is to be relieved from his distress, and that what I am going to tell you of Gousse, the man with only one shirt at atime, because he had only one body at a time, is by no means a fiction. One day in Whitsuntide, in the morning, I received a note from Gousse, in which he begged me to visit him in a prison where he was confined. While Twas dressing, | mused upon his adventure, and I supposed that his taylor, his baker, his wine-merchant or his lJandlord, had obtained and executed a writ against him. I airived and found him in the common room, along with other persons of a suspicious appearance. J asked him who these people were.—The old man, whom you see with the spectacles upan his nose, is a man of abilities who 3 18

AND IIS MASTER. 263 is eminently skilled in calculations, and who endeavours to make his accounts halance with the registers which he copies. This is a difficult matter, we have talk .d of it, but I doubt not he will succee'. And that other?—He is a fool.—But besides ?--A fool who had invented a machine to forge public notes, a very bad machine, a defective machine, wrong in twenty places—And the third in livery and playing upon a bass. He is only here but to wait till evening or to morrow morning ; for his affair is of no consequence, he will be transferred to the Bicétre.—And you? 1? My business is still of Jess import~ ance. After this answer he lays his cap upon the bed, and immediately his three companions disappeared, When I entered, I found Gousse in his night gown, seated at a smal] table, drawing geome34 trical

264 JAMES THE FATALIST much 'taniuillny a if he had been in his-own. house: We -were. now. alone. Pray: whiat 'are: you doing: here!—I; I work, :as-you see.—~And who has lodged you here?—Myself.—How! yourself? — Yes;" myself, sir—And-how did you matiage to do 'this?—Just' as I should have 'done' with any 'other person: I commenced a suit against myself, gained it,cand,: ii consequence of the sentence which J obtained, and the' decree which followed, Iwas apprehended and carried here.—Are you mad:?—No, sir, I have told-you the. matter:as it. stands, —Could: you-not institute another action against: yourself, :gain it, and,. in consequence .of another sentence and another: :décree, - Pert = rioe ment Nest, sad = Dba ou CAGE: ents per aes a ee woatie Gousse f

; AND Wis MASTER, 265 | -_.Gousse: hada handsome female: -sérvant who 'enjoyed his favours more frequently than his wife. This. unequial distribution had 'troubled — domestic — peace. Although nothing'; wad moie difficult than to torment. this man, one who, of all the world -was least alatmed at noise, he adepted the. measute of quitting: his: wife and living :-with his: servant..." But 'his: whole fortune consisted in furniture; instruments, drawings, and other moveables, and he. preferted leaving his wife utterly destitute to, going away- with-his-hands empty.: :,

In consequenceiof this resolution; he conceived the following plan. It was ta give bills to his servant, ‘who. was,-to prosecute him for the payment, and obtain.a.warrant; for. the arrest and:sale of his effects, which were .to be -conyeyed: from the bridge of St. ‘Michael: to: the. lodging where

266 4 JAMES THE FPATALIsT where he proposed: to’ fix: himself aléng with her. He is enchanted with the idea, he draws out the bills, assigns himself over, and employs. two: attornies: Conceive:him runring from. the one to the other, prosecuting himself with:all possible keenness, attacking with: vigour, and defending himself .without " sincerity; conceive him condemned to ‘pay all the penalties enacted by the law, imagine him, seizing in idea. upon every thing in the house; but the event did not turn out exactly as he had projected. He had to do with a very cunning ‘Jade, who, in place of putting an execu> tion upon his moveaples, laid. hold of his person, caused him to be apprehended.and thrown into prison 3 so that however extravagant were the enigmati« _ cal answers he-had returned to.my: ques tions, they nevertheless were true, While

: AND ‘HIS MASTER. 267 | on ee ee While [was recounting this history which you' will take: for a fiction... But that of the man in livery:who ny scraping.upon the bass? Reader,-I pro‘mise to: present you with:it; upon! my — honour; you shall not’ lose it;: but allow me ‘to teturn ‘to’ James and ‘his ‘Master. James: and his: Master had reached’ the stage where. they ‘meant ‘to: pass the night. Te 'was late, the -gate’ of ‘the city was shut, and they: had been‘obliged to stop in the suburbs. There ‘I: hear an. uproar .%. =+You hear! You. were - notthere, what have we to:do with: you? It is‘truce.—-Alas ! James-and his Master ‘is, Athideous: uproar is heard.’ ‘I'see two.men....<

268 SAMIES TIE FATALIS1 the chamber which they occupied, a woman with her hands on her sides, poured out upon them a torrent of abuse, and James endeavoured to appease her, while she no more regarded his pacific remonstrances than the two

persons she addressed paid attention to her invectives. Come, my good woman, said James, patience ; don’t be in a passion; Jet us see what is the master ? These seem to me to be very civil gentlemen. They civil gentlemen ! They are brutes, without pity, without humanity, without any feeling ! Alas! what harm did poor- Fanny do them to be thus mal-treated? She will be lame for it all the rest of her life— The mischief, perhaps, is not so great as you imagine.—It was a dreadful blow, I tell you; she will be lame for it-—You should examine it: send, and call

AND HIS MASTER. 26g calla surgeon.—It is already done.—Put her to bed.—-So she is, .and utters such cries as would ‘pierce your very heart. My poor Fanny!... Amid these lamentations, the bell rang from one of the rooms, and some people cried, hostess ! some wine. She answered, Coming. The bell rang from another part of the house, and the guests called, hostess, acloth ... She answered, Coming.—Cutlets and duck ?—Coming.—A beer pot; a chamber pot ?~Coming, coming—And, from another part of the house, a person, in a furious passion, roared, Cursed babbler! confounded babbler! what the devil is your business to interfere? Are you determined to make me wait till to-morrow? James, James! ... The hostess, a little recovered from her grief and her resentment, says to James, Sir, leave me;

276 JAMES THE FATALIST you are too obliging —James, James ! —Go, therefore, it is your Master, I believe, who calls you.—James, James ! _.. It was, indeed, no other man than James's Master, who had undressed by himself, who was dying of hunger, and out of all temper at being neglected: James ascended the stairs, and, a moment after James, the landlady, who in truth had a most disconsolate air. Sir, said she to James's Master, I beg you ten thousand pardons; a thousand things occur in life to which we cannot readily submit. What would you please to have? I have chickens, pigeons, an excellent back of a hare, and rabbits ; this is the country for fine rabbits. Would you prefer water fowl? James gave orders for his Master’s supper, as he would have done for his own, according to custom. Supper was

AND HIS MASTER, - 27k was served up, and, continuing his repast, Jamas's Master said to him, Well, what the devil were you doing below ? JAMES. Perhaps good, perhaps harm, who knows ? MASTER, And what good, and what harm were you doing below ? JAMES, I prevented this woman from getting herself drubbed by two men who are below, and who at least have broken a female servant's atm. MASTER. And perhaps it had been well for her had she got a drubbing ... JAMES.

272 = SAMES THE PATALIST -- -« JAMES, Pee: For twenty reasons, everyone better than another.' One of the greatest pieces of good fortinie that ever hap- pened to me in my. life, te mé who speak to you . MASTER, Was. getting yourself beaten? ... (Drinks). — JAMES. Yes, sir, beaten, knocked down upon the high way, by night 5 returning from the village, as I told you, after having performed, in my Opinion, a véry foslish thing, and, in yours, the noble ac_ tion of giving away my money. sex MASTER.

'SND HIS MASTER. 273 _ MASTER: _Tredélleee : (drinks); But what was the 'origin of 'the quarrel which. -youaccommodated below, and of the bad treatment which the landlady's daugh"ter, or servant, received ? JA at ES. Upon my faith, that I don't know. "MASTER.: You ate then unacquainted with the origin of the business in which you interfere!.:. James, this conduct. is consistent neither with prudence, with justice, nor with the principles . . (drinks). 3 JAMES. I imow not what principles ate, but tules which we prescribe to others, from VOL t T our

974 JAMES THE FATADIST — our own feelings ; I think one way, yet I cannot help acting another. All your sermons are like the preambles to the royal ediéts. All preachers wish their lessons to be put in practice, because we should be the better if we followed them ; but these gentlemen have a fair _game to play. Virtue . id MASTER. Virtue, James, is a good thing ; both the good and bad speak well of i ites. (drinks). -SAMES. > 98 - For both of them find their aceount in doing so. MASTER And how did it turn ont so fortunate for you to be knocked down ?

SAMBS.

AND HIS MASTER, 278. JAMES. It is late; you have made a good supper; so have I, Weare both fatigued, believe me ; let us go to bed, ‘ MASTER, We cannot yet; the hostess re ; something to bring. Till she comes, resume the history of your amours, GAMES. or. Where about was 1? I bescéctt you, for this time, and every other, to set me a going. | MasTBE. I' take chiarge of that, and, to enter uposi “my funtion’ of proriipter, you were in bed, destitute of miotiey, greatly incomimoded with the. state of your T2 peréon,

996 JAMES THE FATALIST person, while the doctor’s wife and her children eat up your tea and toast, JAMES. . ‘Here a coach was heard to stop at the door of the house, A servant entered, and asked, Does not there lodge here a poor mian, a soldier, who walks upon a crutch, who returned last night from the next village >—Yes, answered the do¢tor’s wife; what do you want with him ?—To carry him away with us in the coach.—He is in that bed, . draw the curtains and speak to him. James was exadtly here when the hostess entered, and said ; What do you" chuse to have asa desert ?. The Master answered, Whatever you have got. The hostess, without taking the trouble to go down stairs, called from the room, 3 Nanny,

“AND HIS MASTER. = = -.277: Nanny, bring some fruit, biscuits and confections... At the word -Nanny, James said, aside to himself; Ah! this is the girl who has been so ill-treated ; we must at least appear to be in a passion, .-; And the: Master » said to’: the hostess, You seemed:‘but now to be sadly vexed! te. © HOSTES s. And who would not have been vexed? ‘The poor creature had done nothing to offend | them. No sooner had ‘she. entered the room than I heard” her cry 3 ; ‘but such cries... ‘Thank God, I am. now a little hearténed ; ‘the surgeon says it will be “nothing : she has, however, two large contusions, one upon the head, the other upon the shoulder. MASTER,

978 JAMES THE FATALICT “MASTER Have you had her long ? HOSTESS. _A

fortnight at most. She had been " deserted at the next stage. MASTER. How ! deserted ? HOSTESS. Aye, my God! was she! There are people in the world harder than flint. She was nearly drowned passing the river which runs just by; she came here, as 1f by a miracle, and I received me An charity. MASTER. How old is she? x s HOSTESS,

AND His MastER, =. 29 HOSTESS. ‘t Believe she is more than a year and ahalf . At these words James burst into a loud laugh, and exclaimed: It is a bitch ! . HOSTESS. The prettiest in the world, I would. — not give my eas for ten louis, My poor Fanny! . “MASTER, ; Madam is then tender hearted. HOSTESS. ~ You are right... Tam attached to my, beasts and to my domestics, MASTER

280: JIAMES THE FATALIST : MASTER. - It is very proper. And who are they that so sadly ill treated your Fanny? HOSTESS. — Two citizens of the next town. They whisper each other perpetually, they imagine that nobody knows what they say, and that we are ignorant of their adventure. It is not mote than three hours since they have been here, and I have not missed a word of their business. “ It is very diverting, and were you not in - a greater hurry to go-to bed than I am, I would tell it you just as their domestic told it to my servant who happened to be his country woman, who fepeated it to my husband, who repeated it to me. The mother in law of the youngest passed this way not three mionths ago. She was

' AND HIS MASTER. 281 was going much against her inclination to a country convent, where she did not live to turn grey headed; she died there, and this is the reason why our young men are in mourning ... But you see, without being sensible of it, I have got on the thread of their story. Good night, gentlemen, and good rest. You found the wine good? — MASTER, Very good. HOSTESS. Were you pleased with your supper? MASTER. Very well pleased, although your spinnage was somewhat dirty. VOL, I. U . HOSTESS,

982 JAMES THE FATALIST HOSTESS. I sometimes am a. little aukward;

however, you shall have an excellent bed and be laid in a pair of clean sheets. We never present them twice in this house. With this the hostess withdrew, and James and his Master went to bed smiling at the gui pro guo which had led them to take a bitch for the daughter, or servant of the house, and the passion of the hostess for a stray bitch which she had only a fortnight in her possession. James said to his Master, while tying the string of his night cap, I will lay a wager, that of all the living crea- . ~ tures,

AND HIS MASTER. 283. | tures in the inn, this woman loves only her Fanny ... His Master answered: That is very possible, James ; but let us go to sleep. : END OF VOL, I,

JAMES THE FATALIST AND HIS MASTER actrees VOL. IX,

JAMES THE FATALIST AND HIS MASTER. TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH OF DIDEROT. IN THREE VOLUMES. VOL. IL ee LONDON: PRINTED FOR G. G. AND J, ROBINSON, PATER-NOSTER-ROW. 1797.

jAM E S$ PH E FATALIST | AnD iars MAS TER. Wurtz James and his Master ate-enjoying repose, I am going to discharge my promise by the thistory of the man - in the prison who was scraping upon the ~ bass, .or rather of his comrade, Mr. — Gousse. ‘The third, said he to me, is the " steward’ of a “family of tank. , He‘had -fatlen.in love with the wife of.a pastry“vot. IL. B cook,

4 ~~ JAMES THE FATALIST cook, in the street of the University. The pastry-cook was a simple fellow, who paid more attention to his oven than to the conduét of his wife. If his jealousy did not incommode our lovers they were at least embarrassed by his assiduity. What did they .do to free themselves from this constraint? The steward presented to his master a petition, in which the pastry-cook was represented as a man of bad morals, a drunkard, who was constantly in the tavern, a brute who beat his wife, the most virtuous and most’ unfortunate of wo‘men.’ . Upon this petition he.obtained a: lettre-de-cachet, and: this: lettre-decachet, which disposed of ‘the

liberty of — the husband, was put into the hands of ‘an exempt to be executed without delay. It happened, by accident, that this.exempt was.a friend of, the .pastry-cook. They

AND. HIS MASTER... 3 They were accustomed to go-now and then to the wine merchant. The pastrycook furnished the tarts, and the exempt paid the. bottle. The latter, authorised by the Jettre-de-cachet, passed before the pastry-cook’s door, and made. him their usual signals, As they were. eating the tarts, and moistening them with’ wine, the: ‘exempt .asked his companion how, his, trade went i—Very, well —If he had no. unpleasant affair upon his hands? —None. —If he-had no- enemies }—He did not. know of any. —On what terms he lived with his ; relations, | his neighbours, his wife —In friendship and in peace,— Whence then can proceed, added the exempt, the order I have to arrest you? If I did. my. duty J I should seize you. by the collar, there would. be. A coach ir in waiting, and I should conduét you to the fee appointed by this Jesrre-deB 2 cachet.

x JAMES THE FATALIST cachet: Take and readit ... The pastrycook read and turned pale. The exempt said to him : coufage, let us only consider what is best to be done for my security attd for ‘yours: Who frequents: yout house ?==Nobody = ~-Your wife 1s a coquet ‘and ishandséme:=+I allowhet todo ‘4$ she pleases.= Has no body any design ‘upon er?—No, by my faith if ice fidt % cettain steward, who cotnds's titties atid ‘squeezes her hands 3th Hee " ‘/petts to hier idfe staff; butit is in my shop, in in” ptesehice ° of ‘myself and my boys, anit I Welievé that nothing passes ‘between then: whichis not perfectly “consistent ‘with virtue and “honour.~~You are a ‘simple felidw !=—That is very possible, ‘bat’ ‘the best thing-a mah ‘cath “do to believe his ‘wife honest, ‘anid this ‘1 a.—And to ison does this ¥éWward Belong: 2—To M. te Saint Florentin:+ And

AND -HIS MASTER, , an And from: what. offices do. you. think this /etére-de-cachet has. issued ?—From the offices of M. de St. Figrentin pethaps.—You are.ri

ights What ! ! eat my pastry, | kiss my wife, and i imprison, me! I this is too black; I cannot believe itl— You are a simple fellow! How have you found. your wife for some days?—+Rather melancholy than gay.—And how long is it since you gaw.the steward? Yesterday, I believe; yes, it was yesterday.—-Did you observe anything ?--Iam not muchaddidted to make observations, but I thought that when goingaway they made signs with theit heads, one.seem' ing to say yes, the other no.--Which of them seemed to say yes? — The steward.-~-They are: either innocent or they are accomplices, Hearken, my friend, dan’t return to your house, save yourself in same place of security in the a3 Temple,

6 JAMES THE FATALIST Temple, in the Abbaye, or wherever you think proper; and, in the mean time, allowme to manage: above all things, however, ‘remember well... Not to niake my appearance, and to ‘be secret. —Just ‘so: At the same moment the house of the ‘pastry-cook is surrounded with spies. Informers in every garb apply to the pastry-cook’s wife and enquire after her husband. To one she answers that he is sick, to another that he is gone to an entertainment, to a third that he is gone toa wedding. —When is he to retains She cannot tell. “The third day about two o'clock in the morning, the exempt was informed that a man had been seen, with his head -wrapt up in a cloak, gently to open the street

- AND HIS MASTER. - 7. “street door and to steal into the ‘pastrycook’s house.: Immediately the exempt, accompanied by .a commissary, a smith, a hackney coach and some officers, repairs to the place. The door is picked open, the exempt and the commissary go up stairs’ with little noise, they knock at the door of the pastry-cook’s wife; no answer; they knock again; no answer; the third time they ask from | the inside, Who is there?—Open.— Who is there?—Open, in the king’s name.—Good, said the steward to'the. pastry-cook’s wife with whom he was in bed, there is no danger, it is the.exempt come to, execute his order. Open, I will tell him my naine, ‘and the matter isended, = | . - The pastry-cook’s wife in her: shift opens, and then throws herself again B 4 inte

8. JAMES THE FATALYST into bed. The exempt ; Where is your husband? The pastry-cook’s wife: he> is not here. Fhe exempt drawing the curtain, Who is this person then ?— Steward : it is I, I am the steward of M. de Saint Florentin.—You lie, you are the pastry-cook, for he is the pastrycook wholies with the pastry-cook’s wife. Rise, dress yourself, and follow me. It was necessary to abey. He’ was brought here. The minister apprised of the villainy of his steward, has approved the conduct of the exempt, who is to Come at night, to transport him to the Bicétre, where thanks to the cecohomy of the administrators he will eat his quarter of bad bread, his ounce of beef and scrape his bass from morning till night . . . Should I likewise Jay my a: head

‘AND HIS MASTER, © : 9 head down on the pillow till James and his Master awake; what say you? Next day James rose very early, thrust his head out at the window to see what kind of weather it was, and found it was detestable, went to bed again and left his Master and me to sleep as rene __ as we pleased, ; James, his Master, and the other travellers who had stopped at the same inn, supposed that it would clear up about mid-day. Still, however, it did not, and the rain, by which the tempest'was accompanied, having swelled the stream which separated the suburbs from the city to such a height that it was-dangerous to pass, all those whose way lay on that side adopted the resolution of losing a day and waiting. Some got into con versation ;

10 JAMES. THE BATALIST versation; others walked about, thrust their nose out at the door, looked at the sky and came in again swearing and stamping their feet; many engaged in politics and drinking, many in.play, the remainder in smoaking, sleeping, and doing nothing. The Master said to James; I hope that James will resume the story of his amours, and that heaven, desirous that I should enjoy the satisfaction of hearing the conclusion of them, detains us here by bad weather. JAMES. Heaven desirous! We never know what heaven desires and what it does not, and perhaps it 1s perfectly ignorant itself. My poor captain who is no more, has

repeated it to me an hundred times; and the longer I have lived the more I hare

AND HIS MASTER, . il have perceived that he was right... Now for your part, my Master, MASTER. Tunderstand. You were at the coach, and the servant whom the dod¢tor's wife told to draw your curtains and speak to you. JAMES. This servant comes to my bed side, and says to me, Come, my good fellow, 'get up, dress yourself, and let us set 'out.—I answered, from between the sheets and the bed cover in which my head was wrapped, without either seeing or being seen by him; Comrade, let me sleep, and go away.—The servant replies to me, that he has orders from his master, and that he must execute them.—And this master of yours, who gives

32 JAMES THE FATALIST gives you orders respecting a man whom he knows nothing about, has he ordered payment of what I owe here? The matter is settled.—Make haste ; all the family expe&t you at the Castle, where-you will be better off than here; at Jeast, if their treatment correspond with the curiosity they have to see you. I let myself be persuaded, I rose and dressed myself ; he takes my arm. J had taken leave of the. doctor's wife, and was going to mount the carriage, when this woman, coming up to me, takes me by the sleeve, and asks me to go to the corner of the room, where she had a word to speak to me. Friend, added She, you have no reason to complain of me ; the doctor has saved your limb; I have paid you a great deal of attention, T hope you will not forget me at the : Castle.

AND HIS MASTER, - 43 Castle-—-What can I 'do for you~ You can desire that my husband at« tend you there ; they are people of fashion ; it is the best practice im the 'county. 'The noblenan is generous, and pays handsomely; it will. be. your fault if you do not make our fortune, 'My husband has made 'many attempts to introduce himself there, but: all to 'no purpose-But, Mistress Doétor, is 'there not a surgeon at the Castle — Certainly there is!—-And if he. were your husband, how would you relish his being unjustly dismissed ?—~This sutgeon is a man to whom you are not

at all indebted, ‘and, I think, you are under some obligations to my husband; ° if you are restored to the use of your limb, it is his dding—And because your husband has done me.a-kindness, must

14° JAMES THE FATALIs? must I be guilty ef an injury to another? Yet, if the place were vacant . . James was going to proceed when the hostess entered, with Fanny in her arms, wrapped up in swaddling clothes, kissing it, bemoaning its misfortunes, caressing it, and talking to it as if it had been her child. My poor Fanny ! It has done nothing but cried all night. And you, gentlemen, have you flept well ? MASTER. Very well. “HOSTESS, ‘Time slips awayat all hands, -. JF AMES, Iti 1s. troublesomé. endueh after alle : HOS T

AND HIS. MASTER, ; 16 HOSTESS. =; Have you far to go? JAMES.,:: We know nothing about it. :.;_ HOSTESS. zon are in Purana of some person ? ieee - e: Synge (be o i f tite: ar JAMES, We are not “in purstit‘of any person. HOSTESS, You go on or stop, according as your business on: the road may suggest.:* “JAMES. We have no business. feces. cake e's HOSTESS. . Youa are tray elling for pleasure: id ‘JAMES.

46 JAMES THE FATALIST “JAMES. Or for pain: HOSTESS. I wishthe former may be the case: JAMES. Your wishes do not signify a straw } it will happen as it is decreed on high. HOSTESS. Oh ! it is a marriage. JAMAS Peihaps i it may be so, or it may not.’ HOSTESS. Be cautious, gentlemen. That man below, who used my poor Fanny so cruelly, has made a very ridiculous marriage ‘..e.++ Come, my poor os 3 beast;

AND HIS MASTER: 17 beast, let me kiss you; I promise you this shall not happen to you: again: See how it trembles at every jout ! MASTER, And what i is it which is so singular in this man’s marriage ? When James's Master put this question, the hostess says, I hear a noise be_ low, I will go and give some orders, and then I shall return and tell. you the whole story... The husband, after being tired calling. My

dear, my dear, comes up stairs, and along with him a. neighbour, whom he did not observe, The landlord says to, his wife, What the devil is this you have done? ... Then turning round and perceiving his neighbour; Have you brought me some mOhey? . evak | VOL, Ir. Pie NEIGH \

38 JAMES THE PATALIsT NEIGHBOUR. No, friend, you know very well that I have none. HOS +! You have none! I shail know then what to do with your plough, your horses, your oxen and your bed. How, fatterdemalion !.. . NEIGHBOUR. I am no tatterdemalion. HOST. _And what are you then? you are in misery ; you do not know where to find com to sow your fields with; your landlord, tired of making you advances, means to withdraw from you all further assistance. You come to me, this woman intercedes; this cursed prattler, who

AND HIS MASTER. 19 who is the cause of al] the follies of ‘my - life, persuades me to lend you money ; Elend it you; you promise to repay it, and disappoint me ten times, Oh! I promise you, that I shall not disappoint you. Out, out, I say..James and his Master were preparing to plead this poor devil's cause, but the hostess, by putting her finger on her. mouth, hinted to them to be silent. HOST. Out from hence. NEIGHBOUR. All that you have said is true; and, what is more, there are bailiffs in my house ; and, in a moment, my girl, my boy, and. myself, shall be reduced te beggary. c 2 HOST

20 JAMES. THE FATALIST | ~ HOST. 2 “Iti is the fate which you deserve: What has brought you here this morn-. ning? I leave the bottling of my wine, I come up from my cellar, and don’ t find you. Out, I say. NEIGHBOUR... "Friend, I came; I dreaded: sex Te~ Ception which you would give me; I have returned, and am going away. HOST. | You will do well. . NEIGHBOUR. - Then my poor Margery, who is so accoraplished and so pene must Be to a situation in Paris! HOST.

AND :HIS MASTER, = 27 HOST. = Soe A situation in Paris ! Do you wish t to ruin the girl ? NEIGH BOUR It, is not I; it. is the’ austere man to : + whom T now speak

1 that, wishes i it, . a ost, - Eo, te “Me an austere man ! ! la am not, I i never was, and be know i it well. ~ NEIGHBOUR ee, Tam no longer i ina condition to support my ‘daughter and son ; my girl will go into meerice, and. my, boy will. enlist, ; HOST. And: it is I who am the cause of 3 it! 1 cannot bear this.—You are a cruel C3 . man;

24 JAMES THE PATALIST man ; you will be a pest to me as long as I live. Come, what do ee necessities require? as NEIGHBOUR, I will accept of nothing. I am vexed at being your debtor, and I ne_ vér shall contract another obligation to you in the course of my life. You do me more harm by your abuse than geod by your services. If I had money I would throw it in your face ; but J have none. My: daughter will be whatever it shall please God to make her; my son will get himself knocked on the head, if it must be ; a3 for myself, I shall beg, but not at your door, No more obligations to such a scurvy fellow as you. Pocket up the price of imy oxen, my horses and my utensils; ranch good may it do you, You sxre i born

_ AND HIS MASTER... = 3 born. to make ingrates, and I do. net wish to be one. Adieu, HOST. | My dear, he is going away ; stop him. . : HOSTESS. | Come, neighbour, let us consult a ‘bout the means of assisting you. NEIGHBOYVR. I don’t wish for his assistance ; it is _ purchased at too high a price... The landlord repeated, in a low tone of voice, to his wife, Do not Jet him ; away; stop him. His daughter at. Paris! his son in the army ! himself upon the parish ! I'cannot suffer this! In the mean while, his wife was employing her influence to no purpose : | c4 the

24 JAMES THE FATALIST the peasant, who had some spirit, would — not accept of any thing, and remained — _quite inexorable. The host, with tears in his eyes, addressing himself to James and his Master, said to them, Gentlemen, endeavour to bend him from hts "purpose ... James and his Master interfered. They all at once conjured the peasant. If] eversaw...—If you ever saw ! but you was not there. Say, if there was ever seen.—Well, be-it so. If there was ever seen a man.confounded at a

refusal, and transported at another condescending to accept his money, it was this host; he embraced his wife, he embraced James and his Master ; he cried, Let him go, and drive these ‘execrable bailiffs out of the house. NEIGHBOUR. _ Admit then... : “HOST.

AND HIS MASTER. 05 moss | _ I admit that I. spoil every ching: . bat friend, what is it that you wish ? Pe ~~Take me as Iam. Nature has formed me of a composition of austerity and tenderness.—I can nejther grant nog refuse. NEIGHBOUR, Can’t you act differently ? _ HOST. I 4m at an age when faults are not easily .corre€ted ; but, had the first person who addressed me, snubbed me qs much as you have done, I should perhaps have amended. Neighbour, I thank you for this lesson; perhaps I shall profit by it,.. My dear, go down quickly and give hhics what he wants, — The devil ! March then; | zounds ¢

$6 JAMBE THE FATALIST zounds ! march ; go away !—My dear, do pray make a little haste, and not deep. him waiting ; you will return immediately to these gentlemen with ’ whom you. seem to be so happy... ’ 236 he wife goes down stairs with the ~ geighbour. The host staid still a moment; and, when he was gone, James says to his Master, This is a singular character! Heaven, which hath sent this bad weather to detain us here, in erder that you might hear my amours, what does it now propose ? _ The Master, lolling in his arm-chair, yawning, rapping his snuff-box, answered, We have more than one day to live together, James, unless . . . JAMBS. That is to say, for this day, it is the a ofHeaven that Ishould holdmy tongue,

AND His MASTER. 27 tongue, or that the hostess should speak: She is a babbler that loves speaking with all her heart 5. 3° let a eae ‘on ‘then. ‘MASTER. You seem rather testy. sTAMES. “It is because I like to speak also. MASTER. . Your time will: come. { vtndetsiand you, reader ; — say you, have we. got the very catastrophe of the Capricious Philanthropist. Y think it is. I would have introduced into that piece, had I been the author, a character who should have seemed introduced by way

of episode, yet who would

_ 28 JAMES THE FATALIST would not ‘have-been so. ~This ¢harater should have sometimes’ appeared, _ and his presence should have been prot duced by some motive. The-first:time, he should have come to request a fa~ vour ; but, the fear of a bad reception should have induced him to retire before the arrival of Géronte. Urged by the entrance of bailiffs into his house, the second time he should have ‘taken courage to wait upon Géronte, but ~ the latter should have -refused to see him. At last, | would have broyght him to the catastrophe, where he should _ have played exactly the same part as. the peasant with the inn-keeper : like the .peasant, he should. have had a daughter whom he was going to fix with a milliner; a son whom he was about to withdraw from school, to put him to some employment ; as to him3 self,

-\ AND HIS MASTER. -. 29 self, he'should lave resolved to beg till he had become. tited of life, - ,; You should-have, seen the capricious philanthropist, at the feet of this man, you should have -heatd the capricious philanthropist. scolded ‘as he deserved, he should have been obliged t to apply to every family in the. neighbourhood; in order to soften his debtor and constrain him to accept new assistance. The capri‘cious philanthropistshould have been pus nished,he should have promised toamend; but.at this very moment. he should have resumed the character, by falling into a passion with the charadters in the. scene, to whom, when displaying their po_ liteness in entering the house, he should “have said bluntly: What the devil is the. use of. these COTEM. si But the should -have stopped short in the middle of ae the

30 JAMES THE FATALIST the word, and in a softened tone said to his nieces: Come, girls, give me your hands and let us go on.—And in order to have connected this charatter with the principal business of the piece, you would have made him a protégé of Géronte’s nephew ?—Very well! And it should have been at the intreaty

of the nephew, that the uncle should have. lent his money? -Admirable !—And this Joan should have’ been a ground of complaint to the uncle against the nephew ? Even so.—And would not the catastrophe of this agreeable piece have been a general repetition, before the whole family assembled, of what he had done before with each of them individually 2 You are right.—And if I ever meet M. Goldoni I will recount to him the scene that passed in the inn.—And you will a

AND HIS MASTER, 31 act very properly; he is too able a man * not to tufn it to advantage. The hostess came up stairs, still with Fanny in her arms, and said ; I hope you will have a good dinner; for the poacher is just arrived, and his lordship’s gamekeeper will not be long behind. .. Saying this she took a chair. When she was seated she began her story, as follows. HOSTESS. One should distrust servants, masters have no worse enemies. JAMES. Madam, you don’t consider what you say, there are good ones and bad onss among them, and perhaps you could reckon more good servants than good masters. * M, Goldoni is the author of the comedy called Le Bourru Bienfaisent (Capricious Philanthry~ pist) here alluded to. © 2 MASTER.

32 «JAMES THE PATAiIST MASTER, James, you don’t think what. you say; and you commit precisely the same indiscretion by which you are offended. JAMES: It is because masters . . : MASTER. It is because servants .. : Heyday! reader, what prevents me now from exciting a violent quarrel between these two persons? James from taking the hostess by the shouiders and thrusting her out of the roorti, James from being seized by his Master and turned to the door by the shoulders? _ and from making the one take this and the other that; and thus prevent you - = from

AND “Hts “MAsTHR;- 33 from hearing more of the story of the hostess, and the concliision of James's _ amburs?:° Cheer up; I “shalldo. nothing of all tna ‘The Wastes hit proceeded: \ ‘ a 2 Win: TT OR. “It must he woe that-if! tiers are many bad men there are pany bad women, Sea) Bie ik fi} PeNiece LiL a ya MR pee : And that we need not go far to find them. -. ; a wong tle . ae ae HOSTESS): se se _ Whit

thisines have'}Gu-to ahterfaxe? Panta womans -I tidy say ‘oP ‘women whatever I-please, Edonts t Want yout’ ap: ee ee Not oe a iG cued ‘saME i. 7 be Secipes -“My approbation i is as. ‘Bood as another's S ee WOL. IL D HOSTESS.

34 JAMES. FRE FATALIST _ “ROSTESS. . You have got there-a servant, sity who carries. his head high and treats. you with no o respect. I have servants too; but I would fain see them alia soe MASTER. James be silent, and allow deen to The hostess, encouraged by this ebservation of the Master, gets up, interrupts. James, puts. her, hands in ‘her sides,and not remembering, that sh¢ had Fanny in her arms, lets her fj), and there was Fanny lying bruised upan the ‘floor, tossing about in her swaddling clothes, yelpin with all her might, the Hostess iaiingling her cries with Fanny's yelps, James joining in chorus with im_ maade

AND HIS MASTER. | . 85 moderate burstsof laughter, andthie cries of the hostess, andthe Master opening his snuff-box, taking his pinch of snuffand not able to keep from smiling. The whole inn was.in an uproar.—Nanny; Nanny, quick, make haste, bring me a bottle of spirits... . My poor Fanny is killed !, . Unswathe her! .. . How auk» ward you are !—TI do as wellas I can.— How she cries ! Take yourself away; let me do it...She is dead... Laugh heartily you great fool; it is a very laughable thing to be sure . . . My poor Fanny is dead !—No, madam,no, [think she will recover,.see how she moves. . Nanny rubs the bitch’s nose with the spirits and makes her swallow sonie ; the hostess laments over her and rails against impertinent servants; Nanny says! hold, madam, she opens her eyes, do you see how she looks at you!—Poor beast! D2 how

30 JAMES THE FATALIST how that look’speaks! “ who*would not ~ be affeéted?—Madam, caress. her .a little, say something to- her in return; cry, my child, cry, if this is any relief to you. Beasts, as well as men, have each their appointed fates; the idle, the peevish, the stubborn, the gluttonous are often fortunate, while another, that is perhaps the best creature on earth, .is given as a

prey’ to misfortune.—Very true,’ Madam, there.is no justice here below.—Tush, swathe it again, carry it to my pillow, and remember that if: it utters the least cry I shall blame you for it. Come, poor beast, let me. embrace you once more before they carry you as Come here then fool that’ you . These dogs! this is sweeter and ae more... JAMES.

AND /HIS “MASTER, - 37 SJAMES. - “Than father; mother, brothers, sisters, children, eats nnd. “ ‘ HOSTESS. Yes, but do ‘not laugh. ‘tis an innocént creature, it is faithful to you, it never ‘does you’ ay “harm; while those you mention. ite ee eee ade fe oo “TSAM EST! - Dogs for ever! they are the acme of perfection under heaven.: HOSTESS. If there is any thing which approaches nearer: to™perfection; at: least ‘it is not man. -I wish much: that: you were acaballited with the miller’s ‘dog, he-is.in D3 love

38 JAMES THE FATALIST love with my Fanny; there is not one among you, such as you are, whom he would not put to the blush. He comes ’ at day break more than a league; he plants himself before the window; he sits and sighs most piteously; what~ ever may be the sort of weather there he remains; when it rains, he buries his body in the sand, so that you can scarcely see his ears and the tip of his nose. Would you do as much for a woman with whom you were violently in love? MASTER. This, to be sure, is very gallant, _ «JAMES, But where is the woman to be found who is worthy of so much attention as your Fanny?... The

AND -HIQ MASTER: 39. _ he: passion of the -+hosteés ‘for ‘beasts was not her ruling passion, as might bé conceived ; her.ruling passion wastotalk, . The moté satisfy ction’ aiid. thé ‘itiote patience-you displayed'in Hieening to-her so 1ntich thé greater: wx yout ‘tierit; ‘OF course she did not réqilite uth entreaty to resume the story of the singular marriagein which she had been interrupted ; she only requived: i@' a condivion-that _James should be silent. The Master became surety for Jaines’s silence. James carelessly: placed -himself: int ‘a: éérher with his eyes shut,ihis tat

sloticheđ-over “his ears, and his back half turned wpdn: the hostess. The Master coughed, spit, blew his nose, drew out his watch, looked what o’clock it was, pulled out his snuffbox, tapped upon. the lid; - took a pinch of snuff, and the hostess Prepared, to. D4 , taste

$0 «JAMES THE FATALIST | taste the: delicious :plcasute! of ‘holding. forth:= oh ha _ ‘The hostess was just going to- begin; when. she heard her; bitch ery... Nanay; see to. this poor beast... . Tam sid | know not where I: was. ; ee 5, A M ES. 8 nathan: Kou have not yet said “py thing ee adie oe aa : These two men with whotn I quatreled about my Poor Fanny: when. you ‘at~ rived, Sir. eat a eae i ave JAMES is t | ‘Say, genlemen, ; Pa 2 aks HOSTESS. es ere ‘And'why so? * JAMES,

AND: His’ MASTER. = 41 “JAMES, Because you have'always' treated: us hitherto with this paliteness,and because I am accustomed to it. My, Master calls me James, other people call me Mr PAM CRY ree natn, 1 SS 2 tes a = i 0. STE Ses oe Be | neither, call you James agri Nr. James, Lan not.speaking tO you... —(Madam?——what is it ?-—-The bill: of fare for number five.—You will-find it on the corner of the chimney-piece}— These two persons are’ worthy gentlemen; they-came from “Paris: and: they are on their way..to. the estate. of the elder of the two. . ord pws g! Gta Tay APMCE 8. elas! Who ‘knows ‘that 3.7. tb ro cor HOSTESS,

42° JAMES THE FATALIST HOSTESS. They whosay it. AMES. 7” ee ia ee A fine’ reason ! bake The Master makes a sign to the’ hostess, which she construes into an intimation that’ James is disorderéd in his biain. ‘Fhe ‘hostess ‘replies fo the Master's sign by a compassionate shttig of her shoulder, and adds : ‘At his age! this is very meaty re 3AM Esie.- 5 Very ‘melanicholy, gever. to know where one 1s going. HOSTESS. on The elder of the two is called the Marquis des Arcis.. He was a gay man, very

AND HIS MASTER: © 43 yery amiable, with bit- a sorry opinion, of the virtue of

wonien. . JAMES. Het was sight. “HOSTES & ‘Mr J ames you interrupt me. | SAME s. is . . Mrs. Hostess of the Stag, I am not speaking to you. HOSTESS, The Marquis however found one singular enough to keep him at adistance. | Her name was Madame de la Pommerayé. She was a widow of character; of birth, of fortune, and of pride. M. des _ Arcis broke eff all his other connedtions,. attached himself solely to Madame..de la

AA JAMES: THE

AND: HIS. MASTER; |. 45. for-gallantry; -he-was; - what the -world calls,-a:mari.of; honour. - ‘The perséverance ofthe ‘ Marquis, seconded by-his pérsonal qualities, his, youth, his: figure, the appasent-sin¢erity of; his, passion, by solitude, a natural disposition to; tenderness; 1n;a-word, by ‘every -feeling;which an us open: te = seduction: of men ae ath him. into nies teen. room, and serye- him as usual)-had theieffect and-Madame de la Pommeraye,,. after having .withstood. the, .Marquis .. for several..months, and resisted ,even her own inclinations, exa¢ted from. him,. as is. customary ,-the.-most solemn. oaths, madethe Marquishappy, whowouldhave " enjoyed a most. pleasant lot, ‘had, he preserved, for: his. ‘mistress, those sentiments iwhich . he shad: sworn to maintain,:and which she. -entertained for him. Mark Ye,

46 sans THE FATALIST ye; sity women only know how to love § men are totally ignorant of the matter » «.—(Madam.?—What is it ?—-A mendicant.friar.—Give him twelve sous for the gentleman who:are here; six.sous fot me, and let him go into the other rooms).--At the expiration of a few years the Marquis began to- find the life which he Jed-with Madame de: la-Pommeraye too.dull: He. proposed to her - that they should mingle: in society, and she consented; that they should receive male and female visitants, and she consented ; that they should have dinner and supper parties and she consented. ' By degrees he-passed one day dnd-two days - without seeing her; by and by he absented himéelf from the dinner ‘and supper parties which

he had arranged ; a short time afterhe abridged his visits; he had business which ‘called him away; when ; 2 he

" -ANDIHIS MASTER, ; at he came, he spoke a werd; ‘sat hitnself down in an easy chair, took-up a pam-— phiet, threw it down; spoke to his dog,’ and-feel-‘askeep. > At-night, his heaith, whigh:boedme very bad; ‘required him | to rétive at anearly hour, it was the opinion of ‘Tronchin. “ This same Tronchin is a great man; { doubt not but he will cure:our friend in circumstances in "which others would :despair of her.” And saying this he would: take his.cane and his hat and.: gO. away: sometimes ' without-embracing ‘her. Madame dé Jz - Potimeraye i . (Madam 2 What is it?--The cooper:—-Let him go dows to. the cellar, and examine: those: two casks of ‘wine.)—-Madame de la Pommeraye’ perceived. that : shé- was. no longer’ the object. of his love ; it: was ne= cessary -that,-she. should. ascertain the fact, and this;was' the mode she.adopted., , —Madam

48 JAMES THE FATALIST aes a Gacteseiaes ram: -comibgy’ a ant a ae 2 Re Ee a EAT Be “The ee dived” of hese idea tions; went. dawn ‘stairs, and: took mea“ sures. for aiiat ing ae to them. «: prea Ee HOSTESS... Ses get « One day after. dinner: she said to the Marquis, You -are‘rausing,: my-friend ! —You are muising also, Marchigness. —True, my meditations are. melancholy. enouzh. — What is: the ;.matter swith you }—Nothing.—That is impossible. Come, Marchioness, -said he, yawning, tell me what it is; it-will-amuse both you and me. What ate-youtroubled with ennui ?—No; but there are days... On which -people’ are apt’ to. fall. into ennui.—Yau are mistaken, my dear,. I protest. you are mistaken; .but, in re= . "ality,

AND HIS MASTER. 49g ality, there are days! ... One does not know ffom what it proceeds. — My dear, I have a long time. been. tempted to ‘make you my confident, but I-am afraid of giving you vexation.—You give me vexation: you?———-Perhaps I may; but Heaven is witness of my innocence ...-—-(Madam? madam? madam ?—Be what it may I have forbidden you to call me; call my husband.—He is from

home.—Gentlemen, I beg your pardon, I will be with you in a moThe hostess had now gone down stairs, returned, and resumed her story. —It has happened to me, without my being conscious of it, by a curse.to which apparently the whole human race is subject ; since I, even myself, have not escaped it.Ah, it concerns VOL. I. E you,

50 JAMES THE FATALIST you, and to be afraid! .. . What is the matter ?—~Marquis, the matter is, I am wretched ; I am about to render you so ; and, every thing properly considered, I had better be silent—No, my love, speak out; can you keep any any thing that lies upon your heart a Secret from me ? Was it not the agreement we made, that we should lay open our souls to each other without reserve? —It is true, and this is the very thing which weighs me down ; it isa charge which aggravates a fault of a more important nature with which J accuse myself. Have you not perceived that I no Jonger have my former gayety ? I have lost my appetite; I neither eat ‘nor dtink, but because my reason tells me. x is proper. I cannot sleep, I am dis

AND HIS MASTER. 51 displeased with our most intimate com= munications. During the night I examine myself, and say ; Is it that he is tess athiable? No. Is it that you have reason to be dissatisfied with him? No. Can you reproach him with any suspicious connections ? No. Is his tenderness for you diminished ? No. Why then, while your lovet continues the same, “has. your heart undergone a change? For it has changed: ~ you Cannot conéeal it from yourself; you no longer | expect him with the same impatience : : in seeing him, you’ no longer feel the same pleasure, nor that anxiety when his return is protracted; that tender emotion, at the sound of his carriage, when he was announced, when he appeared, you no more experience.—How, madam!... At this the Marchioness de Pommeraye covered her E 2 eyes

$2 JAMES THE FATALIST eyes with her hands, reclined-her head, and-a moment was silent ; after which she added, Marquis, I was prepared for your astonishment,

for all the bitter things with which you could reproach me. Spare me, Marquis! ... No, do not spare me; say all your resentment can diétate ; I will listen with resignation, for I deserve it. Yes, my dear Marquis, it is true... Yes, lam... But is it not misfortune enough, that the circumstance has happened without dissembling it, by adding the shame and contempt of falsehood? You are the same; but your friend is changed. She respects: you ; she esteems. you as much or more than ever; but... but a woman, accustomed, like her, closely to examine what passes in the most secret recesses of her soul, and to allow nothing to impose upon her, cannot -_ conceal

“AND HIS'MASTER, «53 conceal from herself that love is fled. The discovery is frightful; but it is not the less: real.: The Marchioness de la Pommeraye ! L, even I, inconstant and ‘fickle !.. . Rage, Marquis, seek the imdst’ odious names that are to be found ;-I have already bestowed them upon myself 3; bestow them upon me ; I am prepared to receive them’ all: all, except that of faithless woman, which Thope ‘you will spare me, for that, in truth, I do not deserve. .. —(My dear ! —What is the matter >—Nothing.. There is‘not a moment's rest to be sot in this ‘house, even upon days when there is little or no Company, , and when you" would think there is: nothing to do. “How is' a ‘woman'in iy situation to be pitied, ' especially whe ‘she’ has a beast of a husband’ 1) Saying this, the Marchioness de la Pornmeraye threw E 3 herself

54 JAMES THE FATALIST herself back in her arm-chair, and felt a weeping. The Marquis threw himself down at her knees: You are a charming, an adorable, a matchless woman, said he; your frankness,” your sincerity confounds me, and should overwhelm me with shame. Ah ! what superiority over me does this moment confer upon you ! How dignified I see you, myself kow mean ! You have been, the first to confess, while it was I who first was guilty. My dear, your sincerity overpowers me, and I were .a. monster if it did not; and if I did not acknowledge that, the history of your heart 1s, wogd for word, the history, of mine, All you said

to. yourself Ilikewise said: I was silent, I was miserable ; and I know not when J should have had the courage to speak.--Indeed, my love ?—Nothing more true, and we 3 have

-AND HIS MASTER. §5: have only to congratulate ourselves: . mutually upon having lost, at the same mothent, the frail and deceitful feel-. ings by which we were once united. In reality, what a misfortune, had my- love continued after yours ceased! or, that E:had been the first in whom it ex-. pired !—You are right, I feel it—Never did you appear to me so amiable, so lovely, as at this moment. And if the experience of the past did not render me more cautious, I should believe that I love you more and more than ever... And, saying this, the Marquis seized: her hands and kissed them.— (My dear !--What do you want ?>—The straw merchant.—Look at the account. ——And where is the account ? ... ; Stop, stop, I have it.) Madame de la Pom_Meraye, concealing in her breast:.the mortal: vexation with: which she was EA dis

56 JAMES THE FATALIST distracted, resumed the conversation, and said to the Marquis; but, Marquis, What is to become of us?» We have neither of us imposed upon the other; you are entitled to my whole esteem. I do not think that I have entirely lost the right which I. possessed to yours. We will continue to see each other ; we will resign ourselves to the confidence of the most tender friendship ; we will avoid all the ennui, all the little perfidies, all the reproaches, all the irritability, with which passion upon the decline is commonly -attended. We shall be originals in our kind. You will recover all your liberty ; you will restore me mine : we will launch into the world, I will be the confident of your conquests; I will conceal from you none of mine, should I make any, of which I entertain con-. , siderable

AND HI8 MASTER. ~ 57 siderable doubt, for you have rendered me fastidious. This will be delight. ful! You will aid me with your counsel, and I will not refuse you mine, in the perilous emergencies in which you may coneeive it to be necessary.

Who knows what may happen? JAMES, . .Nobody. MARQUIS, It is very probable, that the more I mingle in the‘world, the more you will gain by the comparisons which will be made, and that I shall return to you more passionately fond, more convinced than ever, that Madame de Ja Pommeraye was the only woman formed for my happiness; and, after this return, there is every chance that I'shall remain yours till’ the end of my life.—If it should

58 “JAMES THE FATALIST should happen, on your return, that I was no longer to be found? for, in truth, Marquis, we are not always just, and it might not be impossible that I had conceived a liking, a fancy, a passion for another every way your inferior—Assuredly, I should be afflicted, but I could have no reason to complain. I could only blame fate, which had separated us when united, and brought us together again when our union was no longer attainable .. . After this conversation, they began ta moralise upon the inconstancy of the human heart, the frivolity of oaths, the ties of marriage . . . (Madam ?-—What is the matter ?—The coach). Gentlemen, said the hostess, I must leave you. This night; when all my business is performed, I will return and finish this adventure, if you have any curiosity. . (Madam!

AND HIS MASTER, - bg (Madam !.. My dear? . ; . Hostess ?. , Coming, coming). After the hostess was gone, the Master said to his servant, James, did you remark one thing? JAMES. What? MASTER. That woman relates her story much "better than you would expect from an inn-keeper’s wife. JAMES. True. The frequent interruptions she received from the people in the house several times.put me in a pas_ sion, . . | MASTER.

60 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. And me too. And you, reader, speak without dis-. simulation, for you see we are in a fine train of frankness; do you wish that we should leave here this elegant and prolix talkative hostess, and resume James’s amours? As for me, I am not obstinately bent upon either. When this

woman returns up stairs, James, the talkative James, asks no better than to resume his part, and shut the door in her face, and to get off by saying to ker, through the key-hole, Good night, madam; my Master is asleep ; I'am going to bed. We must postpone the remainder till we dgain pass this way. The

_ AND HIS. MASTER. 61 The first oath which two beings, composed of flesh and blood,' made to each other, was at the foot of a-rock which was mouldering into dust. They called to witness their constancy a sky, which is not an instant the same. Every thing was passing on within them and around them ; and they believed their hearts exempted from 'vicissitude. « O children, always children! .. . I do not know from whom these refleCtions proceeded, whether from James, his Master, or myself; it is certain they. proceeded from one of the three, and that they were preceded and followed by: many others, which would have served: Jamés, his Master, and myself, till supper, or after supper, even till the return of the. hostess, if James had not. said to his Master, Hold, sir, all these sublime sentences, which you have uttered upon the

62 JAMES THE FATALIST the subje&-of the boot, are not so good as an old fable current about the fire-sides in my village. MASTER, And what may this fable be ? JAMES It is the fable of the Sheath and the Hanger. One day the Sheath and the Hanger quarrelled. 'The Hanger said to the Sheath: Sheath, my friend, you are a wanton, for every day you admit new Hangers :—The Sheath replied to the Hanger: Friend Hanger, .you are a wanton, for every day you change your Sheath ... Sheath, this is not what you promised me.—Hanger, you deceived me first . .—This dispute arose at

AND HIS MASTER, . 63 at table. Eyelash, who was seated between Sheath and Hanger, joined in the conversation, and said to them, You Sheath and you Hanger, both did well to change, since change pleased you; but you were wrong to promise that you would not change. Hanger, did not you see that God formed you to go into

different Sheaths ; and you, Sheath, to receive more than one Hanger ? You considered, as fools, certain Hangers that made a vow of renouncing Sheaths, and certain Sheaths no better, who made a vow of shutting themselves — against every Hanger, without thinking that you were almost as foolish when you swore, you Sheath, to keep by one Hanger, and you, Hanger, to keep by one Sheath. Here

64 JAMES THE FATALIST Here the Master said to James, Your fable is not very moral ; but it is merry. You do not know the whimsical idea which passes across my brain. I am marrying you to the hostess, and I am thinking how a husband would do, when he is fond of speaking with a woman who never ceases to speak. JAMES, Just as I passed the twelve first years of my life, which I spent in the house of my grandfather and grand- . mother. MASTER. What was their names? What was their profession ? JAMES. They were brokers. My grandfather ‘Jason had several children. The whole family

AND iis MAstER, 85 family was sedates they rase,they. dressed theinselves, they followed their dusiresi, they returned, they dined, they went back without saying a word. In thé -evening they would seat themselves ‘on their chairs; the mother and daughters would spin, sew and knit ; the Jads rest themselves, and the father ead the Old Testament, MASTER. a And you, what did you? | JAMES I ran about the room with a gag in my mouth, . m MASTER. | With: a gag! JA M E 8. "Yes, with a: gay; ‘and it is to that cursed gag that I owe the rage of speak | VOL. 1, F ing,

66 JAMES: THE: RATALIST ‘ing. Thé,week often passed without ’s -mouth ‘being: opened in the house: ofthe Jasons. All-het life, which was:a.long one, my gtandinother. had-said nothing but ‘Aats. ¢o ‘sell,-and my :gtandfather, who was-to be séen:in. the auction rooms. stnding, ereét iwith his “hands under his great coat, had never said more than ove peniy.:.."There. were days on which he was tempted to disbelieve the Bible. ae GAS S : MASTER. And why a S15 a ME ss On account of the Len cori tained, which he considered as prattling unworthy of the Holy Spirit. He

would. say that those who; repeat are blockheads, wko take . their, hearers for no better. |. MASTER,

~ AND HIS MASTER. 67 MASTER. James; if to recompense you for the long silence which you preserved during the twelve years in which you were pageed in your grandfather's house, and while the hostess was speaking ... JAMES. I ‘tinal resume the history of my my amours ? MASTER, No, but another history in which you have have left me, that of your captain’s comrade. JAMES. Oh! my Master, what a cruel remembrance have you excited. FQ MASTER,

68 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. ‘No, James, my little James ! JAMES. What are you laughing at? MASTER. At that which will afford me subject of laughter more than once, seeing you in your youth at your grandfather's house with a gag in your mouth. JAMES. My grandmother would take it away when there was no body present, and when my grandfather observed ir, he was not very well satisfied, he would say to her: ‘Go on, and this child wilh become the most unconscionable talker that

AND HIS MASTER. 69 that ever existed. This prophecy has been accomplished. MASTER. Come, Jamies, my little Farney; thie history of your captain's comtrade. ca JAMES. _ -[will not refuse to relate it, but-you will not believe it. MASTER, — | Ts it then very marvellous JAMES. No, it is because the circumstances have happened to another, a French soldier, called, I believe, M. de Guerchy. MASTER. Very well, I will say asa Frerich:pbet who had made a very good epigram, . F 3 aid

70 JAMES THE FATALIST to one who gave it out for his own, in his presence: Why might not the gentleman have made it? I actually made it, I myself. ..Why might not the circumstances which James is going to relate, have happened to his captain’s comrade, since they really happened to a French soldier, M. de Guerchy ! ? But in relating this story to me you might hit two birds with one stone, you might acquaint me with the adventure of these two characters, of which I yet am ignorant.

JAMES. So ‘much the better ! but s swear te me that yen are, MASTER, | ___Lswear. Reader,

"AND: HIS’ MASTERY - Whi Reader, I should be strongly tempted to exact from you the same oath, but I will: oily” point out to youa singularity inthe character of James; which seems’ to be derived from ‘his- grandfather | Jason, the silent broker, and this is that James, contrary'to the custom of great talkers,talthotgh. he loved dearly ‘to speak, shad: a:preat:aversion to repetition. Accorditigly: he would sometimes say to his Master, sir, what a dreadful futurity'do-you'prepare for-me. What is toibecome of. mé-when I have no longer’ any thitig left to say ?—You will’ begin. anew—James begin anew! The contrary is decreed on high, and — were:I evento ‘begin anew I could not prevent: tiiyself: from eras “Ah;~ if your grandfather: ‘Neard-you !'s; . And’ I should ae the want of the Be waTitt F4 JAMES.

a2 JAMES THE PATALIST JAMES. At the time when games, af er were played in the aoa ‘of St. si . main and St. Laurent... eee ar WASTE Ri docs ae But that is at:Paris,, and: your, - eapies tains comrade was- commandant of a fort upon the. frontier: LAMES.. . For God’s- ake sir, allowrin ime 4 tel’ .,- Several officers enteredcinto.a shpp:. and there found another- officer'talking:, with the mistress. One of: them-pros. posed to the latter-to play at .passe-diay. for you- must: know that: after-the:deathy; of my captain, his comrade-grown-rich,;: had also become a gamestety;. He then ' er M. de Guerchy, accepts. Fortune . puts

AND HIS. MASTER. 73 puts the dice in the hands of his adversary who continues to pass, pass, pass,” without end. The game had: beenwarm and they had played’ the tout, the tout du. tout, the’ little moitiés, thegrand moitiés, the grand: tout dis tout, when one of the bye-standers. thought’ proper to tell M. de. Guerchy, or. mycaptain's comrade; thiat‘he would dowelk to:. stop’ there, and: give over playi ing: because: his..antagonist understood! the game: better: than he. Upon this‘remark, which‘was- nothing but‘a! pleasantry, my: captain's comrade, ‘or M. de

Guerchy, believed: ‘that he had -to do! ‘with: a sharper: He -slipt his ‘hand: into his: pocket, drew outa sharp‘ pointed knife, and when his antagonist laidhis' hand’ uport the dice to ‘put: them inthe’ box,’ he drove ‘the knife'into his hand’ aridnailed: it to the table, | saying : : If'the: es dice

74 JAMES. THE FATALIST dice are loaded, you are a cheat, if they are good, lamin the wrong. The dice are found to be-good...M. de Guerchysays: I am extremely sorry, and I offer™ you any. sstisfaction yau please . This was not the-proposal of my: captain’s comrade. He ‘says,.I have lost my money, | have pierced the hand of aj brave man, but: to make amends I hayes gained the -pleasure of . fighting . as much’ as I please »... The -officer, who ' had been nailed, withdraws and:goes to. get. himself: : dressed, - | .Wohen-i:hé::i87 cured, he finds the oflicer>who had nailed him, and demands-an :explanas tion. The latter, ‘or M. de Guerehy, : admits ‘the. ‘demand, to -be: fair. The : other; myrcaptain’s: comrade, throws his arms round:his,n¢ck, and. says to him, Texpected you with gn-iipatiehce which“ J-am-uaable to express... They go ta: the

’ AND HIS MASTER. | 75 the place appointed; the xailer, M. de Guerchy or my captain’s comrade, is fairly, Tun through the body ; the person, who had been nailed, raises him up, has him conveyed home, andsaystohim ; Are we again to meet? ..M. de Guerchy made. no answer ; my captain’s comrade ans-. wered, Sir, I confidently depend upon it—They fight a second, a third time, and as often as-eight or ten: ‘times, and always the nailer is left upon the field. T hey were both officers of distinction, both of them men. of merit, their adventure made=great noise, till at. length the ministry interfered. The one is detained at Paris, the other fixed. at his post. M. de Guerchy submitted to the orders of the court. My captain’s comrade,.was afflidted. beyond measure ; and such is the difference of two men whose character is bravery, . but

76 9-« JAMES THE FATALIST But of whomi one is discreet, and the other has a

grain of folly in his composition. Uitherto the adventure of M. de Guerchy and my captain’s comrade is common to them; it is the same, and observe, my Master, that this is the reason why I have named them both. Here-I am. going to separate: them, and I wilt speak to you no more‘of my captain's comrade, because the remainder only applies to him. Ah ! sir, here you will see how: little masters we are of our des~. tinies, and- how many extraordinary things there are written: im the grand’ register! My captain's comrade, or the nailer, solicits: permission’ to make a tour to his native country, and obtains it. His

¢ AND HIS MASTER, - 77 His route was through Paris. He takes a place in a public vehicle. At three o'clock in the morning the carriage passes by the Opera. The audience was coming out. Three or four young hair brained masquers propose to go and breakfast with the travellers. They arrive at day break to breakfast. They look at one another attentively. . But how astonished was he who had been nailed to recognize the nailer, The latter presents his hand, embraces him, and testifies how greatly he is enchanted at so fortunate arencounter. Instantly they retire behind a barn, draw their swords, the one in his great coat, the other in his domino. The nailer, or my captain’s comrade, is again laid upon the ground. His adversary dispatches assistance to him, sits down at table with his friends and the company of the coach, and

*8 JAMES THE FATALIST anc eats and drinks merrily. Some prepared to fol é omy cr ow their route, and others to return to the cepitel, in ther masks and upon post horses, when the hostess re-appeared and put an end to James’s recital. She had now got up staifs, and I warn you, reader, that it isne longer in my power to send her away again. —W hy so?—Because she presents herself with two bottles of Champagne, one in each hand, and because it is decreed on high, that every orator, who addresses himself to James with this exordium, must necessarily be heard with attention. She enters, sets down her bottles upon the table and says: Come, Mr. . James, Jet us make friends... The 3 hostess

AND HIS MASTER. "yg hostess was no longer ‘in’ the bloom of youth. She was & tall, fat, active, come- | ly -woman, full and plump, her mouth 4 little large, but she had fine teeth, -broad cheeks, prominent eyes, a square brow, a most beautiful skin, a physiognomy,open, lively and gay; arms somewhat-too:thick, but:most elegant hands, hands that might have furnished a model for the painter or the statuary. ‘James took her round’ the waist and em‘braced her heartily, his spleen had never -been able to hold cut. against good wine and a fine woman;..it was decreed on high of him, of you, reader, of me,.and -of many others ?--Sir,said she to the Mas'ter,won't youjoin us ?--Look you, had you still an hundred leagues to travel, you would not drink better all the way ... Saying’ this, she placed - one ‘of the two bottles between her knees, and drew the cork; with singular dexterity she

80 JAMES THE FATALIST she covered the mouth with her thumb, without allowing a drop of wine to escape. Come, said she to James, quick, quick, your glass ... James presented his glass; the hostess removing her thumb a little on one side, gives vent to the bottle, and, in a’‘moment, James’s face is covered all over with foanr. James took this waggery in good part; the hostess laughed heartily, and James and his Master followed her example. They drank several bumpers successively, to ascertain the virtue of the bottle, then the hostess said, Thank God ! they are all now in bed, they will interrupt me no more, and I may resume my story ... James gazing on her with eyes, the natural vivacity of which the Champagne had augmented, said to. 1 his

AND HIS MASTER. 81 his Master ; Our hostess has been beautiful as an angel; what think you, sur? MASTER. Has been! By —, James, you ought to have said, she is so still. JAMES. Sir, you are right; my reason was, that I do not compare her with any other woman, but with herself when she was young. ; | HOSTESS. Ah! Iam no great things now! you should haveseen mewhen you might have spanned my waist with your two Hands. Many travellers have gone four leagues out of their way to put up at this house. But let us leave, where they are, all the wise and foolish heads I

have turned, VOL. TI. G and

8% JAMES THE FATALIST and return to Madame de la Pommefaye Benepe . JAMES. What though we should drink a glass to the foolish heads you have turned, that is, to my health ? HOSTESS. “- With all my heart; there “were some of them worth the pains, whether ¥ou reckon yours among the number or not. Do you know for ten years I was the resource of gentlemen of the army, that 4s to say, all virtue and honour? I have obliged a gocd many of them, who.would have had no small difficulty, without my assistance, to support and I have. no reason to complain of any of.them, nor they of me. I never required their notes; sometimes they ‘ 1 made

AND HIS MASTER. 83 made me wait. At the end of two, three, of four years, my money returned... Then she began to give an enumeration of the officers who had done her the honour to draw from her purse ; and Mr. Such-a-One, colonel of the re~ giment of ** *, and Mr. Such Another, captain in the regiment of ** *: and here James fell a crying, My captain! my poor captain! Did you know him? HOSTESS, Did I know him? A tall handsome man, rather lean, with a noble determined air, straight limbs, two little red spots at his left temple. You have then served in the army ? JAMES, Have J served in the army ! G 2 HOS 1

84 JAMES THE FATALIST HOSTESS. I like you the better for it ; you must still retain some of the good qualities of your former situation. Let us drink to your captain’s health, JAMES. If he is still alive ! HOSTESS. Dead or alive, what does that matter? What, is nota soldier madé to be killed? Ought he riot to be enraged, after a dozen of sieges, and five or six battles, to'die among this rabble of dirty devils? ... But let us return to our history, and drink anomeme thet glass.

AND HIS MASTER. 85 MASTER. Upon my faith, hostess, you are right. HOSTESS. I am very glad you think so. MASTER. For your wine is excellent. HOSTESS, Oh ! It is my wine you mean ? Very true! You are right. Do you recolle&t whereabouts we were ? MASTER. Yes, at the conclusion of the most

perfidious of all confidences. Pp

8 JAMES THE FATALIST and return to Madame de la Pominefaye ! V. a : JAMES. . What though we should drink a diets to the foolish heads you have turned, that is, to my health? HOSTESS. “ With all my heart ; there were some-of them worth the pains, whether you reckon yours among the number or not. Do you know for ten years I was the resource of gentlemen of the army, that 4s to say, all virtue and honour? I have obliged a gocd many of them, who,.would have had no small difficul£y3¢ without my assistance, to support their campaigns. They are brave men, and I have no reason to complain of any of.them, nor they of me. I never required their notes; sometimes they 1 “made

AND HIS MASTER. 83 made me wait. At the end of two, three, of four years, my money returned... Then she began to give an enumeration of the officers who had done her the honour to draw from her purse ; and Mr. Such-a-One, colonel of the re~ giment of * * *, and Mr. Such Another, captain in the regiment of * * *; and here James fell a crying, My captain! my poor captain! Did you know him? HOSTESS, Did I know him? A tall handsome man, rather lean, with a noble determined air, straight limbs, two little red spots at his left temple. You have then served in the army ? JAMES, Have I served in the army ! G2 HOS 1~

84 JAMES THE FATALIST HOSTESS. I like you the better for it ; you must still retain some of the good qualities of your former situation. Let us drink. to your captain’s health, JAMES. If he is still alive ! HOSTESS. Dead or alive, what does that mat-' ter? What, is nota soldier madé to be killed? Ought he riot to be enraged, after ‘a dozen of sieges, and five or six battles, to‘die among this rabble of dirty devils? .... But let us return to our history, and drink another glass. MASTER.

AND HIS MASTER. 85 MASTER, Upon my faith, hostess, you are right. HOSTESS, I am very glad you think so. MASTER. For your wine is excellent. HOSTESS. Oh ! It is my wine you mean ? Very true! You are right. Do you

recollect whereabouts we were ? MASTER. Yes, at the conclusion of the most perfidious of all confidences. é 3 HO s

86 JAMES THE FATALIST HOSTESS. M. le Marquis des Arcis and Madame de la Pommeraye embraced, enchanted with one another, and separated. The greater the constraint under which the lady was in his presence, the more violent was her grief when they parted. It is then, cried she, but too true ; he loves me no more! ,.. I shall not enter into the detail of all the extravagances which we commit when you forsake us, it would make you too vain. J have said, that this woman was haughty, but she was far more vindictive. When the first paroxisms of passion were over, and when she was enjoying all the tranquillity of indignation, she considered of the means of avenging herself, and of avenging herself in a cruel manner, a way which should

AND HIS MASTER. 87 should terrify all those who attempted in future to seduce and deceive a virtuous woman. She did avenge herself, she was cruelly avenged ; her yengeance was not concealed; but it corrected no person ; we have not been less basely seduced and deceived. . JAMES, Others may complain ; but you! ... HOSTESS. Alas! I have the best reason, sir! What fools we are ! Yet, if these base men made any thing by changing! But let us leave this. What will she do? She does not know yet ; she will meditate.upon it ; she does meditate! JAMES. If while she is meditating upon it... . GA HOSTESS.

88 JAMES THE FATALIST HOSTESS. “That is well said. But our two bottles are’empty . . . John ?—-Madam.— Two bottles from those which are at the very bottom, behind the faggots.—Immediately .. —Jn consequence of reflection, this is the idea which strikes. her. Madame de la Pommeraye had formerly known a country lady, whom a law suit had obliged to repair to Paris along with her daughter, young, ‘beautiful, and well educated. She hud learned, that this lady, being ruined by ‘the loss of her suit, had been reduced to the necessity of keeping a gaming-table. They met at het house, played, supped, and commonly one or two strangers staid

and passed the night with Madame or Mademoiselle, as they had a mind. Madame de la Pommeraye sent on¢

AND HIS MASTER, 89 one of her people in quest of these crea.. tures. She found them out, and asked them to pay her a visit, though they scarcely recolleéted her. These Jadies, who had taken the name of Madame and Mademoiselle d'Aisnon accepted the invitation ; and, on the morrow, the mother went to Madame de Ja Pommeraye's house. After the first compliments had passed, Madame de la Pommeraye asked d'Aisnon what she had done, and how she lived, since the loss of her suit?——-To be ingenuous, replied d'Aisnon, I have been engaged in a profession which is dangerous, infamous, poor, and, to me, disgusting ; but necessity is superior tolaw. IJ had almost resolved to put my daughter to the Opera, but she has a weak voice, and is but an indifferent dancer. I took her.in the course of my suit, and, after

90 JAMES THE FATALIST after it was determined, to the houses of magistrates, noblemen, prelates, and farmers of the revenue, who accommodated themselves with her for a time and then threw her off: yet she is'as beautiful as an angel, and is possessed of wit and grace, but she has nothing of the spirit of libertinism, none of those talents which are adapted to awaken the languor of men of ruined constitutions. But, what has been most prejudicial to us is, a prepossession which she conceived for a little Abbé of quality, whom I shall not name; a creature impious, sceptical, hypocritical, and a gteat enemy to philosophy; . but he is the lowest of those who,' in order to arrive at a bishoprick, take the road, which is at once the surest, and which requires the least ability. I know not what he put into my daugh_ter's

AND HIS MASTER. ~ ol ter's head, to whom he came every morning, and gave an account of his dinner and supper, and of his rhapsody. Whether he will be a bishop or not, no matter; they luckily fell out. My daughter having one day asked him, if he

knew those against whom he wrote ? and the Abbé having answered, that he did not; ifhe held different sentiments from those which he exposed? and the Abbé, having replied that he did not, she suffered herself to be carried away by the acuteness of her feelings, and represented to him, that the part which he acted, was the most nefarious and false of which man could be guilty ... Madame de la Pommeraye asked, if they were much known.—Unfortunately too much.—From what I observe you do not seem attached to your situation ?—By no means; and my daughter

93 JAMES THE FATALIST daughter protests to me every day, that the condition of the most wretched is preferable to hers; so melancholy has her situation rendered her that she begins to be deserted ..—-Could I suggest to you a mode of making a splendid fortune for both, would you agree to adopt it then ?>—With great pleasure. —But I must know whether you will promise scrupulously to conform to the counsels which I shall give you.— Whatever they may be, you may depend upon it.—And you will be ready to obey my orders whenever I please ? " —We wait them with impatience — This is sufficient; you may return home ; it shall not be long before you receive them. In the mean time get “quit of all your moveables; dispose of -every thing ; do not reserve even your : 2 clothes,

AND HIS MASTER, 93clothes, as they are gaudy, such will not suit my views, James, who began to feel himself interested, says to the hostess, What though we drink to the health of Madame dela Pommeraye ? HOSTESS. Most chearfully. ‘JAMES. And to that of Madame d’Aisnon ? HOSTESS. With all my heart. | JAMES. And you will not refuse that of Mademeiselle d’Aisnon, with the sweet weak voice, the little turn for dancing, and

g4 JAMES THE FATALIST and the melancholy which reduces’ her to the mournful necessity of accepting a new lover every night. ROSTESS. Don’t laugh; it is a most cruel thing. Did you know the punishment it is when we do not love! .. JAMES. Here is to Mademoiselle d’Aisnon in pity of her punishment. HOSTESS, Come...

JAMES. Hostess, do you love your husband ? HOSTESS. Quite the contrary. JAMTB.

AND HIS MASTER. O5: JAMES. You: are much to be pitied; for he seems to be in good health. HOSTESS, All is not gold that glitters. JAMES. Here is to the good health of our landlord. HOSTESS, Drink away by yourself. MASTER, James, James, my friend, you are pressing too hard. HOSTESS. Don’t be afraid, sir; the wine is good, and will produce. no effect to-morrow. JAMES,

96 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES. Since it will produce no effect tomorrow, and since I care little about losing my reason to night, my Master, my fair hostess, I have still another toast to give; a toast, which lies near my heart; the health of Mademoiselle d’Aisnon’s Abbé. HOSTESS. Fy, Mr. Jaries! a hypocrite, an ° ambitious man, a slanderer, a block~_ head, a persecutor; for it is thus we characterize those who would willingly cut the throats of all who differ from them. oy MASTER You do not know, hestess, that James heré.is a bit of a philosopher, and that he

‘AND HIS MASTER.’ 97 he sets an infinite value upon all those insignificant smatterers who disgrace both themselves and the cause: which they défend with: so little ability. He says that his captain used to call them tlieantidote of the Huéts; ‘the: Niedlés, the Bossuets. He knew nothing about the matter..more: than’ you... «Is your husband in bed af ... HOSTESS... 0 “Hei is there ies a bleite 1 MASTE a And does he Permit you to prattle in uns manner ?> re HOSTESS.’ ne RS “Our ‘husbands | are disciplined < ; . Madame’ de la ‘Pommeraye takes, h her carriage, drives to the suburbs most remote from the quarter in which d’AisyvoL. Il, H non

98 JAMES, THE, FATAUIST non lived, hires 4small apartment, in a decent house. in, the neighbourhood of she | parish church, furnishes. is;as soon as: possible, invites d’Aisnon:and. her eae to ‘dinner, and settle them either the same day,.or,a few-days.after, prescribing to them the line of:conduct which they were 49 oe at ad .

JAMES. _ Hostess, we have forgotten the health of Madame. de la, Pommeraye, and; that of the Marquis des casi Ah ! this is not fair! oo te. aypteyer ot ict 338! WOT DL 23 ND errat ae < edet HOSTESS, ‘pene ics Wall, well, MrsJames, the cellar is not empty.. «. The following | is, the ‘substance of fier “inspragtions, as sf, as SUSU ‘ Tiecotlea,”* <9T Fol tah ide. adi ef saab: Ahern HA‘b dotly ni tetiaup oc 4 moreelvgg se aE

AND HIS. MASTER. - 09 * You will not frequent the public walks, for you must not be discevered. You will receive -tio- Visits from ‘any person, not even from your neighbours, whether male or female ; because you must affect to live in the most, retired solitude. - ¢ « You will, after to-inorrow, assure the garb of devotees, for it is necessary that you pass as such. “ You-will have in your house none -but books of devotion; for there must be nothing around you that can betray you, You will be exceedingly punctual in the ‘performance of religious. duty at 2 - church,

100 JAMES THE FATALIST church, both on holidays and worsilig days. * You will intrigue so as to procure admission to the parlour of some convent, for the cant of these recluses may be of use to us, “You will keep up a good understanding with the curate and the priests of the parish, because I may have need of their attestation. - § You will hold no society with any of them, You will go and confess, and take the sacrament, at least twice a month, * You will resume your family name, because it is an honest one, and enquigies may sooner or Jater be made in your country, * You

AND His MASTER: id} * You will, from time to time, give’ a little alms ; and on no pretext whatever will you teceive any. You tiiust be considered as neither poor rior rich. “ Yon will spin, you will sew, you will knit; you will embroider, and you will give your work to the women who subsist on charity, to sell, . © You will live with the greatest sobriety ; two scanty meals from the inn will be enough. © Your daughter will never go out without you,. nor you without your, daughter. Neglect no means of edifi« Above all, I repeat it, never re, 3 ceive

102 . JAMES THE FATALIST ceive either priests, or monks, or devotees at your apartment, a You will walk in ae streets with down cast eyes ; at church, attend to =e but the service.” LE grant tied this mode of life j is angtere, but it will not be: of long conti. nuance, and, I promise you, it willamply recompense you in the end. «Consider, consult your own feelings ; if you think’ such a degree of constraint beyond } your: power, confess it to me; I shall neither be offended nor surprised. I forgot to’ telk” you that it will .be proper that “¥6u should acquire’ alittle’ mystic gibberish, and that. you be familiar with the history of the Old and New Testament, that your devotion =. sages Saas

AND tis MasTER, ~ 103° niay hot appear to be of recerit Origin. Bed ansenist8 or Molinists, as you have a mind, ‘but’ it'will be best pérhaps: to adopt. the 6fiitions of your’ curate. Do ‘dot ‘fail; dt “fandom, ‘ahd dh every oceasion, to rail against the’ philosophets’: cry that-Voltaire was antichrist ; get by ‘heart ‘the work of your little Abbé, ‘and hawk it about if it be necessary’, Madame de“ld Pommieraye’ added, I shall not see you at your apartment ; I am unworthy to hold intercourse ‘with such holy women ; but be hot unedsy ; you will come here privately now and then, and we shall make amends in a select company for your penitential regimen. But, while you affect this appearance of devotion, take care you do not turn a slave to it in reality, As to the expénée uf Four sinall establishment, that is my concern. If H 3 my

admission to the parlour of some convent, for the cant of these recluses may be of use to us. “You will keep up a good understanding with the curate and the priests of the parish, because I may have need of their attestation. . - © You will hold no society with any of them. * You will go and confess, and take the sacrament, at least twice 4 month. ** You will resume your family name, because it is an honest one, and enquigies miay sooner or later be made in your country, You

ir COM sNacI CU BS NCTUICT UST Otte «* You will spin, you will sew, you will knit, you will embroider, and you wall give your work to the women. who subsist on

charity, to sell... . © You will live with the greatest sobriety ; two scanty meals from the i inn will be: enough. “« Your daaghter will never go out without you,. nor you without your, daughter. Neglect no means of edifi. cation: which can be had at a. small ex-. “ Above all, I repeat it, never re. Wn 3 ceive

102 «s SAMES THE FATALIST ceive either priests, or monks, or devotees at your apartment. “© You will walk in the streets with down cast eyes ; at church, attend to nothing but the service.” _ IT grant that this mode of life is augtere, but it will not be: of long conte. nuance,and, I promise you, it willamply recompense you in the end. +Considet, consult your own feelings ; if you think’ such a degree of constraint beyond your: power, confess it to me; I shall neither be offended nor surprised.’ I forgot to’ telF you that it will be proper that (Su should acquire a’ little mystic gibberish, and that you be familiar with the history of the Old and New Testament, that your devotion

“AND HIS MASTER, * 103° nlay hot appear to be of ‘receiit Origin. Bed ansenists'6r Molinists, as' you! have a niihd, ‘but? it-will be ‘best pérhiaps to adopt. the Gpiliitons of ° ‘your’ curate. | Do Hot ‘fails dt“tandom, ‘afid-dh every” occasion, to rail against ‘the’ philosd- a phets’: cry that-Voltaire was antichrist ; . get: by: heart ‘thé ‘work of: your little Abbé, ‘and hawk ‘it about if it be néecéssary’, 2. Madame de‘ la Pominereye” added, I shall not see you at your apartment; I am unworthy to hold intercourse with such holy women ; but be not uneasy ; you will come here privately tiow and thin, atid we shall make amends in a select company for your penitential regimen. uit, while” you affect this appearance of devotion, take care you do not turn a slave to it in reality, As to the expente bf § yout ‘Samal establishment, that is my concert.. If = H 3 my

104. JAMES THE FATALIST my plan succeeds, you will have no need: of my assistance. If it fail from no fault of yours, I am rich enough to place you in better circumstances, and a-more honourable’ situation than that: which you will sacrifice.

But, above all, let me inculcate submission, absolute submission to my will; without which I can neither answer for the present, nor become bound for the future. “MASTER, (Topping upon bis snuff-box, and looking | at bis watch to-see what o'clock it is). What a strange head this woman has! God preserve me from a in, with such anone,. HOSTESS | Patience, patience ! you do not know her yet. JAMES.

AND HIS MASTER. 105 JAMES. — My beautiful, my charming hostess ! suppose, in the mean time, we speak a word to the bottle? HOSTESS, Mr. James, my Champagne seems, in your eyes to have added mightily to the charms of my person. MASTER. I have felt an inclination for a considerable time to ask a question, which may be impertinent, but which I can no longer refrain from putting. ¢ HOSTESS. (OE. Put your question. _ MASTER.

100 JAMES THE FATALIsT MASTER. T am sure you were not born in an im. HOSTESS. True, I was not. MASTER, You have-been reduced by some extraordinary circumstances from a more elevated station. HOSTESS. I confess I have. MASTER. And if we were to suspend the history of Madame de la Pommeraye for a moment... 3 HOSTESS.

_AND HIS MASTER. - 107; HOSTESS: That will not.da,;. I: chearfully sae the adventures of others but not. my: own. Know only that I was ‘educated. at Saint-Cyr, where [read q little of the: Bible and_a great many womances.. Bé«; tween the Abbaye-Royale and the inn, which I now keep, there is an immense. distance. - © =: _ MASTER, It is act; go on as if 1 had sd: nothing. HOSTESS, | While our two devotees were Improy-. ing their morals and. the incense of theig. piety.and sanctity was, sliffused around, Madame de laPommeraye observed. with the Marquis. all. the external marks of. esteem, friendship, and the most, perfect, confidence.

108 JAMES THE FATALIST confidence. He was always welcome; she never chid nor scolded him even after his longest period of absence, and when he related to her

all his little intrigues, she seented to be much amu-: sed with the recital. She gave him her' advice on all occasions of difficulty; she sometimes threw out a few hints about marfiage, but it was in such a disinterested tone that they could not be suspected of being intended to be applied to herself. If the Marquis said any tender or gallant things to her, which are indispensable in maintaining intercourse with a woman after it is once formed, she would smile at them or let them pass. She made him believe that her heart was quite at case, and; what: she could never have imagined, that she: was perfectly happy with him~'as «a: friend; .and then she would say that the a bloom

AND HIS MASTER. 109 bloom of her youth was faded, and: that the edge of her sense was much blunted. '-—How! have you no secret to trust.me with ?—None.—But my friend, the little Count, who was so warm in his assiduities at the time that I reigned in your affection ?—I have shut my door against him, and shall never see him again while I live—He is an eccentric being! and why have you withdrawn from him? —Because I did not like him.—Ah! Madam, I sound you now: you love me still—It- may be so.—yYou calculate upon the return of my affection. —Whliy should I not ?—And you avail yourself _of all-the advantages that may result from irreproachable conduct.—I do.— 'And if I have the good or: the bad fortune again to become enamoured. of you, you will make a merit of taking no notice of my past faults.—You suppose me¢

110 JAMES THE FATALIST me to be 'very delicate and very generous.—After what you have done, my dear, there is no degree of -hereism of which you are not capable—-I am pleased that you think so.—Upon my word, my heart is again in danger I assure you. | JAMES. | _ And mine also, HOSTESS, _ About three months had now elapsed since matters had continued in this situation, when Madame dela Pomme'aye thought it time to. put-her grand springs in motion. One summer's day when the weather was-fine, and when she expected the Marquis to dinner, 'she sent notice to -d'Aisnon and her daughter to repair to the. Royal Garden. The

AND HIS MASTER. 411 The Marquis arrived, dinner was:served up early, they dined,. they dined gaily. _ After dinner, Madame de-la Pommeraye proposed a walk.to the Marquis, if he had no more agreeable engagement. That day. there! was. neither play.nor opera, it was the Marquis who made the _remark, and: in. ordet-to compensate:for the want of.an amusing spectacle by an useful one, chance would have ‘it that it” was he. himself.'who invited the “Marchioness to-go and sée the King’s Cabinet. He- did not meet with a.refusal, as you may: well’ imagine. The horses are put to:-the carriage, thty drive: away, they: arrive. -at the Royal Garden, mingle’ in -the crowd, looking at every: aa and seeing 1 nothing, like ics Ses ee ee Reader,

312 «JAMES THE FATALIST Reader, I had’ forgot ‘to . describe to you the situation in which the three persons, of. whom - we . speak, . were ‘placed, I mean James,his Master andthe hostess ; from the .want of this. precaution you have heard, but you have not seen’ them. Better late than never. The Master was on the left in.his night cap and night gown, carelessly lolling in a large arm chair, covered with tapestry, his -handkerchief thrown over the arm of the chair and his snuff-box in his hand.. The hostess towards.-the extremity of the room opposite to the door, near the table, her glass beforé her. James without ‘his hat, .at her right, with his elbows leaning - upon the table, and his head: inclined ‘be! tween the two bottles; two more were upon the floor by his side. ° On

AND HiS MASTER. ny On leaving the Cabinet, the Marquis and his mistress took a walk in the garden. They were going along the first alley upon the right as you enter, near the nursery, when Madame de Ja Pommeraye uttered a cry of surprise, saying: Iam not mistaken, I believe it is they themselves! Instantly she quits the Marquis, and advances to meet our two devotees. Mademoiselle d’Aisnon looking enchanting under the simple attire she wore, which, attracting no observation, fixes the whole attention upon the person.—Ah! Is it you, Madam ?—Yes, it is I-—And how do you do, and what has become of you this age?—-You are acquainted with our

misfortunes; we were obliged to acquiesce in them, and to live retired, suitably to our little fortune, to quit the gay world when we could no longer VOL. II. I appear }

~ ji4 JAMES THE FATALIST appear in it with decency.—But me, abandon me too, who am not of the gay: world, and who have always had the good sense to consider it as insipid as it teally ist—One of the inconveniences of misfortune is the distrust which it inspires. The indigent are afraid of being troublesome.—You troublesome to me! that suspicion is a real reproach.—Madam, I am perfedtly innocent of it; [have mentioned you twenty times to my mamma, but she would tell me, Madame de la Pommeraye . .. Nobody, my child, thinks any more of us. —How unjust! Let us take a seat, we will have a little conversation. This is the Marquis des Arcis, he is my friend, and we shall be laid under no constraint by his presence. How tall Mademoiselle is grown! How improved she is aince we saw each other !—Our situation

AND HIs MASTER, -115 tion has this advantage that it deprives "us of every thing which is prejudicial to health. Look at her face, look at her arms, observe what we owé toa frugal and regular life, to sléep, to labour, to agood conscience, and that is something . ..—They sat down, they talked of friendship. Madame d’Aisnon spoke a great deal, Mademoiselle d’Aisnonsaid little. They both talked in the stile of devotion, but with ease and without affeGtation. Long before day closed, our two devotees arose. They were reminded that it was yet early. Madame d’Aisnon whispered in the ear of Madame de la Pommeraye, loud enough’ td be overheard, that they had still an exercise of religion to perform, and that it was impossible for them -to remain longer. They were already at some distance, when Madame de la Pomme12 raye —

116 JAMES THE FATALIST raye reproached herself for having omit ted to ask their address, and to give them hers; it is a fault,added she, which formerly I should not have committed. The Marquis ran to repair it. They ‘accepted the address of

Madame de la Pommeraye, but notwithstanding all the importunity of the -Marquis he could not obtain theirs. He durst not offer them his carriage, though he confessed to Madame de la Pommeraye that he had been tempted to make the tender. The Marquis did not fail to enquire of Madame de la Pommeraye who these two women were.—They are two creatures happier than we are. Observe the fine health they enjoy! the serenity. . which reigns in their countenance! the innocence, the decency which dictate their

AND HIS'MASTER, =—:11.7 their remarks! You never see this, it is not understood in our circles. “We pity the devotees, they pity us, and every thing considered I am inclined to think they are right——But surely, Marchioness, it is impossible you could be tempted to become a devotee >———-Why not ?--Beware of that, I should:not wish that our rupture, if it can be called onr, should carry you that length—And you would like better that I should again admit the visits of thelittleCount ?--Much better—And you would advise me to do it?—-Without hesitation ... Madame de la Pommeraye told-the Marquis what she knew of the name, the country, the original situation, and the law suit ‘of the two devotees; adding tothe account all the interest, all the pathétic circumstances she could devise. She thet continued ; they are two women of extra13 ordinary

118 JAMES THE FATALIST ordinary merit, especially the daughter. You may conceive that with a figure like hers people may want for nothing in this place, if they condescend to employ that resource, but they have preferred an honest competence to a disgraceful plenty. What they have left is so scanty, that in truth I do not know how they contrive to subsist. They labour night and day. Indigence, when they are born to it, is a situation which a great many people can support; but to pass from opulence to what is barely adequate to supply the most rigid necessaries of life, to be contented with it, to enjoy happiness in it, is a matter which I cannot comprehend. Observe the advantages of religion. Let our philosophers say what they will, religion isa good thing.—Especially for the unfortunate—And who is the

person

‘AND HIS MASTER. 119 son who is not so inagreater or less degree.—Let me die but you are going to turn devotee.—And where would be the great harm in that! This life is of sd little importance, when we compare it with an eternity to come!—But you already talk like a missionary.—I speak like a woman who is convinced. Now, Marquis, answer me truly, would not alt our riches appear-pitiful baubles in our eyes, were we more impressed with an expectation of the happiness, and a dread of the sufferings of another life? To debauch a young girl, or a wife attached to her husband, with the belief that you might die in her arms and fall at once into punishment without end; admit that this were the most incredible frenzy.—This however is done every day.—It is because people. have no faith, it is because they banish these 14 thoughts

120 JAMES THE FATALIST thoughts from their minds. It is because our religious opinions have- little influence upon our morals.—But, my friend, I protest you are running as fast as you are able to the confessional.—It is in truth the best thing I could do.— Go, you are out of your wits; you have still a score of years for pretty sins; do not leave them unemployed, then you maytepent and goto boast of them atthe feet of the priest if you think proper ... But see what a confounded serious turn the conversation has taken; your imagination gets monstrously gloomy, and it is the effect of that abominable solitude into which you have plunged. Believe me, recall with all convenient speed the little Count ; you will then see neither hell nor the devil, and you will be as charming as ever. You are afraid least Eshould reproach you with this step, . should

‘AND HIS MASTER. 121 should our union ever again be renew .ed, but in the first place we may perhaps never renew our intimacy, and, by an apprehension well or ill founded, you deprive yourself of the most endearing of pleasures, and, in truth, the honour of excelling me is not worth the sacrifice.-What you say is very true I am

sensible, and accordingly that is not the principle which prevents me. .. They said still a great many other things which I do not recollect. JAMES, Hostess, let us drink a glass, that refreshes the memory. | HOSTESS. Drink a glass... . After some turns round the walks, Madame de la Pommeraye and the Marquis returned to the'r 2 : carriage.

122 JAMES THE FATALIST carriage. Madamede la Pommeraye says: how old she makes me appear! when she came to Paris she was aot so high as a cabbage.—You allude to that Lady’s daughter whom we met at the promenade ?—Yes, it is just as it happens in a garden where the roses that are withered give place to those that are new.— Did you observe her ?—Most attentively.—What is your opinion of her? —She has the head of the Virgin of Raphael upon the’ body of his Galatea ; and a sweetness in her voice ; a modesty in her look ; a grace in her carriage ; a decency m her conversation ; which never struck me so much in any lady I have ever seen.—Observe the effect of education—When the foundation is prepared by natural genius. The

- AND HIS MASTER. 123 — The Marquis set down Madame de la Pommeraye at her door, and Madame de la Pommeraye had nothing more’ urgent to perform than to testify to: our two devotees how well she was satisfied with the manner in which they had acquitted themselves, , JAMES. If they continue as they have begun, M. le Marquis des Arcis, were you the devil himself you would not get out of the net. MASTER, I should like much to kmow what is their project. JAMES. | For my part I should be very sorry; that would spoil the whole, HOSTESS,

124 JAMES THE FATALIST HOSTESS. From that day the Marquis became more assiduous in his attendance -at Madame dela Pommeraye’s house, who observed it without-asking the reason. She never was the first to speak of the two devotees. She waited till he opened the subject, which the Marquis did every day with impatience and an ill dissembled indifference. MARQUIS, Have you seen your female friends.

MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. No. MARQUIS. ‘Doe you know that this is not very right in you? Youare rich, they are in narrow

AND HIS MASTER. © 125 narrow circumstances, and -you do not even invite them sometimes to partake of a dinner ! MAD, DE LA POMMERAYE. .I thought the Marquis des Arcis knew me a little better. Love formerly lent me virtues, friendship now lends me defects. I have given them ten invitations, without being. able to procure a single visit. They. refuse to come to. my house, from the singularity of their. ideas ; and, when I visit them, I must leave my coach at the entry of the street, go Inan undress, without rouge, and. without diamonds. We ought net to be too much astonished at their caution ; a false report might serve to alienate the minds of a certain numberof benevolent persons, and deprive them of their assistance. Marquis! It would seem

126 «=: YAMLES THE FATALiST seem that the practice of beneficence costs a great deal. MARQUIS. Especially when devotees are the - object. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. - Gince the slightest pretext is sufficient to divert men from the performance of it, were it known that I také an interest in their fortunes, it would soon be said, they are patronised by Madame de la Pommeraye ; they stand in need of nothing . . . and immediately the charity is withdrawn. MARQUIS. Charity ! MAD.

' AND HIS MASTER. — 197 MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE., Yes, sir, charity ! MARQUIS. “Yon are acquainted with them,, and yet they are forced to subsist upon charity ! | = MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. Once more, Marquis, I repeat it, I seeperfectly that you no longer love me, and that a part of your esteem has fled with your tenderness. And who told you, that if these womien were under the necessity of receiving alms from the parish, it was my fault ? M ARGQUTI & I entreat your pardon, Madam; 4 thousand pardons: Iam wrong. But 3: what

328 JAMES THE FATALIST what reason could they have to refuse the generosity

of a friend ? MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. Ah! Marquis, we afe very far, we people of the world, from understanding the scrupulous delicacy of timorous minds. They think that they ought not to accept the assistance of every person without distinction. «sMAR@UTIS. You thus deprive yourself of the best way of expiating our foolish dissipations. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. Not at all. I suppose, for instance, that the Marquis des Arcis was touched with compassion for their situation. . why

AND HIS MASTER. - 129 why. does he not cammunicate his assistance by hands more worthy ? ~ MARQUIS And less sure. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. That may be. MARQUIS. , Tell me, were I to send them twenty louis, do you believe they would refuse them? ‘MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. I am certain of it; and this refusal would appear to you misplaced, in the case-of a mother who had a charming daughter ? MAR@UTIS. Do you know that I have been tempted to pay them a visit? ~ VOL, Il. K MAD.

130 JAMES THE FATALIST MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. I believe it. Marquis, Marquis, take care of yourself ; this is a movement of compassion very sudden and very suspicious. MARQUI 5. However that may be, would they have received me? MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. No, surely ! The splendour of your carriage, your dress, your servants, and the charms of the young lady, nothing more would be required to afford room for the tittle tattle of neighbours, and to occasion their ruin. MAR

AND HIS MASTER. 131 MARQUIS. . You vex me, for certainly that was hot my object. I must then abandon the idea of giving them assistance and paying them a visit ? MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. I believe so. MARQUIS, But suppose I were to convey my. assistance by your means ? MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. I do not believe this assistance of yours sufficiently pure for me to undertake the charge of it. MARQUIS, How cruel is this ! K 2. MAD.

¥32 JAMES THE FATALIST MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. ‘Yes, cruel it is indeed ; you feel it so. MARQUIS . What a chimera ! Marchioness, you quite mock me. A young lady whom Thad never seen but once... MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. But one of the few who, after they até once seen, ate never forgotten. MARGU Is. It is true that such figures are apt to haunt one. 7 MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. Marquis, take care of yourself; you are preparing a source of vexations, which I prefer, to keep you from incurring

AND HIS:-MASTER, - 413 ‘oO curring, rather than to console you when they have happened. - Beware of confounding those with the persons you have been accustomed to know. They are totally unlike. They are not.to be tempted ; they are not to be seduced; they are not to be approached. . They refuse to listen to your addresses ; you can never obtain the objet of your desires. After this conversation, the Mar-— quis suddenly recollected a pressing | engagement ; he rose abruptly, and left the house ina pensive mood. ~ For a considerable period, the Marquis did not allow even a single day to pass without seeing Madame de Ja Pommeraye ; but when he came, he sat down, he was silent ; Madame de la Pommeraye KB had

134 JAMES THE FATALIST had all the conversation herself. The Marquis, after staying a quarter of an hour, rose and went away. He then dropped his visits for near a month, after which he again made his appearance, but pale, melancholy, and dejeéted. The Marchieness, when she saw him, said,- How ill you look! Where have you been? Have you spent all this time in Bedlam ? MARQUIS. Upon my faith, véry near it. Despair has plunged me into the most unbounded libertinism. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE, How ! despair ? MARQUIS, Yes, despair... . Without

AND HIS MASTER. 135 ‘Without saying “more, he began walking backwards and forwards, not speaking a single word ; he went to the window, looked at the sky, stopped. short before Madame de la Pommeraye; he went to the door, called his servants to whom he. had nothing to say, sent. them away again ; he returned to

Madame,de la Pommeraye, who continued | her work without taking notice of him. He wished to speak, but was afraid to venture. At last Madame de la Pommeraye took pity upon him, and said, What is the matter with you? You leave us a month without seeing you ; you return with a countenance like a ghost, and are as restless as a ‘soul in torment. , ae MARQUIS, I can forbear no longer ; ; I must tell “you all, I was deeply touched with the — K A ~ daugh

136 JAMES THE PATALIST daughter of your friend ; she occupied my whole mind, but I did every thing to forget her, and the more I did, the more she was present to my recollection. This angelic creature haunts me * incessantly. Do me an important service. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. What may that be? ‘“MAR@QUIS. I must absolutely see her again, and I must be indebted to you for the obligation. I have placed my spies all around. They go no where but from their house to the church, and from the church home again. Twenty times I threw myself in theit way, and absolutely they took no notice of me; I planted myself at their door to no purpose.

AND HIs MASTER, = 187 pose. They rendered me first as profligate: asa monkey; thén turned mie pious as an angel. I did not fail poing to mags evety day for a fortnight. Ah, my friend | what a eae: ! how: ai ha she is! oo Madame de la Pommeraye knew the whole story. You mean, replied she to the Marquis, that, after having employed every expedient to effect a cure, you omitted no means to drive yourself mad, | and that, ia the latter partonly, you have “sueceeded ? MARQUIS, And succeeded, I cannot express how far. Will you not take pity upon me ? And am I not to be indebted to you for the happiness of seeing her again ? MAD.

138 JAMES THE FATALIST MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE, The matter is difficult, and I will consider of it, but upon one condition, which is, ‘that you will leave these unfortunate people in peace, and cease to torment them. I will not conceal that they have written to me of your persecution with bitterness; and there is

the letter... The letter, which was given to the Marquis to read, had been concerted between them. It was from Mademoiselle d'Aisnon, who appeared to have written it by order of her mother, and it was executed with elegance and wit, with a mixture of every thing that was handsome, insinuating, touching : with all that. could turn the head of the Marquis. - Accordingly, he accompanied

'AND HIS MASTER. 139 nied every word with an exclamation ; not a phrase which he did not read. again and again : he wept with joy; he said to Madame de la Pommeraye, Acknowledge that nothing can be better written than this—I grant it.—And,. that at every line, we feel ourselves penetrated with admiration and respect for women of this character.—So we should.—I shall keep my word with you; but take care, I beseech you, that you do not break yours, MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. Jn truth, Marquis, I am as mad as you. . You must have preserved an extraordinary influence over me ; it terrifies me. . ; MARQUIS When am I to see her again? MAD.

4140 JAMES THE. FATALIST MAD, DE LA POMMERAYE. Ido not know that. We must, in' the first piace, consider of the means: of arranging the business, and avoiding all suspicion. They cannot be ignorant of your views. Do but think of the cclour which my complaisance would wear in their eyes did they imagine that I acted in concert with you ! .-- But, Marquis, between ourselves, why should'I involve myself in such a dilemma ? What is it to me, whether you are in love or not? and, that you 'gre out of your wits? Fight your way yourself. The part that you assign to me is a little too extraordinary. MARQUIS. My love, if you abandon me, I am undone! I will speak no more to you 2 of

"awD HIS MasTen. 148. of myself, for that might offend you but I will conjure you by those -interesting and deserving creatures who are. so dear to you; you know me, spate them all the extravagancies of which I am capable. I will go to their house 3 yes, I warn you, I will go; I will force their door, I will enter in spite of their _

resistance; I will sit down; I know not what I will say, what I will do; for what have you not to fear from the violence with which I am agitated ?.. You will remark, gentlemen, said. the hostess, that from the conimencement of this adventure to this moment,. every word the Marquis des Arcis had uttered, was'a deadly stroke aimed at the heart of Madame de la Pommeraye. She was choaked with rage and indignation ; accordingly she answered the Mar

142 JAMES THE FATALIST ‘Marquis in a tremulous and faultering voice. But you are night. Ah! had I been so loved ; perhaps . .. Let us-drop that subject... It is not for your sake that I will act, but I flatter myself at least, Marquis, that you will allow me time. “MARQUIS. As little, as little as I can. JAMES, Ah, hostess ! what a fiend of a woman ! hell itself is not worse. - She makes me tremble, and I must drink a glass to hearten me. . What, you won’t join me? HOST ESS.

AND HIS MASTER. 143 HOSTESS. For my part, Iam under no apprehension ... Madame de la Pommeraye would say ; I suffer, but I'do not suffer ° alone. Cruel man; I know not -what is to be the duration of my torment; — but I will render yours eternal .”. ; She kept the Marquis near a month in expectation of the interview she had pro_ mised ; that is to say, she left him all this time to pine, to become thoroughly intoxicated, and, under pretence of sweetening the: irksomeness of delay, she allowed him to entertain her with his passion. MASTER. And to fortify by talking of it. JAMES, | What a woman! what a devil of a woman ! Hostess, my terror-redoubles ? HOSTESS,

144 - JAMES THE FATALISYT HOSTESS, ' "The Marquis came every day to chat with Madame de Ia Pommeraye, who succeeded in completely enflaming his imagination, confirming his passion, and accomplishing his total undoing by the most artful conversation. He obtained information of the country, the birth, the education, the fortune, and the disaster of these women; he dwelt inéessantly upon the subject, and he never thought that he had got sufficjent information nor felt

sufficient sympathy. The Marchioness pointed out the progress of his sentiments, and rendered the term to which it would lead familiar to him, under pretence of representing it as a subject to inspire him with alarm. Marquis, she would say, have a care ; this will carry you a ggeat ” way.

‘AND HIS MASTER. 145 way. Some day it may happen that my friendship, whichyou so strangelyabuse, Will: not. excuse‘me either in- my own eyes-or in-yours. Greater extravagances indeed are committed every day. Marquis, I very much fear that you will not obtain: this girl but upon conditions, which hitherto have not been mae to yen taste. epee OF When Madame de la Pommeraye believed the Marquis well prepared for. the-success of her design, she:.arranged with the two women; that they should come to dine with her and- with the. Marquis, that in order to impose upon. them he should surprise them in a country dress ; which was apeoreney executed, ; | you. i, 7 L - They

140 JAMES THE FATALIST They were at the second course when the Marquis was announced. The Marquis, Madame de la Pommeraye and the twod Aisnons played off their affected embarrassment in a very superior manner. Madam, said he to Madame ce la Pommeraye, I am just come from My estate, it is too late to go home where Iam not expected till night, and I flattered myself that you would not refuse me a dinner.—And saying this he had, at the same time, taken a chair and placed himself at table. The cover had been disposed in such a manner, that he found himself by the side of the mother and opposite to the daughter. By a glance, he thanked Madame de la Pommerave for this delicate attention. Arerthe confusion of the first moment, our two devotees recovered their spirit, they talked, they were even gay. The Marquis

AND HIS MASTER. 149 Marquis discovered thé highest attention to the mother, and the most resetved politeness to the daughter. The scrupulous care which the Marquis observed to say nothing, and to avoid every thing which could offend. them

was to these three wornen a séecfet and most entertaining amusement. They tvere so inhuman as to make him talk religion for three hours together, and Madame de la Pommeraye would say to him, Your discourse forms a wondrous panegyric upon your pareits. The lessons we receive in infancy are never obliterated. You understand all the subtleties of divine love, as if you had received your whole education at St. Francis de Sales. Were you not a little of a Quietist ?—I no longer recolle&t ... It is needless to say that our devotees displayed in the conyersation L 2 all

“148 JAMES THE-FATALIST -all the grace, the wit, the insinuation, -and the cunning which they possessed. As they went along they touched upon the chapter of the passions, and Mademoiselle Duquenoi (for that was their family name) maintained that every one of them was dangerous. The Marquis expressed himself of her opinion. Between six and seven, the two women retired, notwithstanding every effort made to detain them, Madame de la Pommeraye affirming that it was necessary to attend to duty in preference to every thing, without which there was almost no day, the pleasure of which was not tinged with remorse. Conceive them now gone to the great regret of the Marquis, and the Marquis #éte-d-td/e with Madame de la Pommeraye. MAD.

CAND HIS'MASTER;; 149 -MAD. DE. LA POMMERAYE.: In truth, Marquis, am: not I very good natured? Find me another woman in Paris who could do as much. MARQUIS BBS ang (throwing himself at her feet). I acknowledge i it, there is not one who resembles you. Your goodness confounds me, you are the only real friend _ in the world. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. | Are you very sure that you will always feel, in the same: manner, the value of my condut? MARQUIS I should be a monster of ingratitude, if I held its value too cheap. L 8 MAD.

150 0 JAMES THR BATALIST MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. To change the text. What is the state of your heart? : MARQUIGQ ~If I must confess it to you frankly, I

must obtain this girt of perish. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE, yom should know how, =~ ‘ ary is 2 MARQUIS, We will see. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYR, Marquis, Marquis, I know you, I know them, every thipg is before me. The

"AND HIS: MASTER.” 161 * Fhe Marquis was. about two .thonths without shewing himself at Madanie de la Bpmimeraye’ s, and im the interval. he -waé thus employed; he made acquiaintance with the confessor of the mother and daughter. He was 4 friend: to the litle Abbé whom I have mentioned. This priest, after having put in practice all. the hypocritical difficulties which car be opposed to a dishonourable intrigde, and sold as high as possible, the sanctity of his office, lent his aid to every thing which: the Marquis wished to: eon The fst. yillainy of this man of God was to-check the kindness of tlie rector, and to persuade him that these two women whio were protected:by: Madame de la Pomirieraye obtained from: the pa“ish. that charity of which they deprived L 4 other

152 JAMES THE FATALIST other indigent persons, more fit objects of pity than they. His purpose was. by misery to render them subservient to . his views. Next, in the discharge of his office of confessor, he laboured to excite. division between the mother and the daughter. When he heard the mother complain of the daughter, he aggravated the faults of the latter and irritated’ the resentment of the former—if it was the daughter who complained of her mother, he insinuated to her that the power of fathers and mothers over their children was limited, and that if the perse“ cution of her mother was pushed to. a _ Certain point, it might not perhaps be impossible to withdraw her from a tyrannical authority. Then he enjoined her as a penance to return to confession. Another

“AND HIS MASTER; . 153 - “Another time-he would speak to her _of her charms, but cunningly. It was one of the most dangerous gifts which God could confer upon a woman, from the impression which had been experienced from them by a worthy gentleman of his.acquaintance, whom he did not name, but whom it was not difficult

to guess. He proceeded from this subject to the infinite mercy of heaven and the indulgence of God ‘to faults which certain circumstances rendered necessary—to the weakness of nature for which every one finds the excuse in himself—to the violence and generality of certain inclinations, from which the most holy men were not exempted. He then asked her if she had no desires, if her constitution did not speak to her in dreams, if she was not troubled by the presence of men ? Next °

B54 0 TARIES. THE FATALIST :: Next he agitated the question whether:a woman ought to yield to a man who entertained for her a violent passion, and allow him to die for whom the blood of Jesus:Christ had been shed, and he durst not decide. Then he breathed profound sighs—he raised his eyes to heaven—he prayed for the tranquility of souls in torment. The young lady allowed him to proceed: the mother and Madame de la Pommeraye, to _ whom she faithfully reported the dis+ course of the diretor, suggested-to her to disclose circumstances which all tended.to encourage him.” JAMES. - Your Madame de la Pommeraye is a malicious woman. “MASTER,

‘AND HIS: MASTER. 955 MASTER, 4 James, it is easy to say that; but from what does her malice proceed? From the Marquis des Arcis—restore him to what he swore, and to what he ought to be, and point out to me any défe& in Madame de la Pommeraye? When we are upon our journey you will accuse her, and I undertake the charge of her defence; for this vile pimping pried, I abandon him, FRAMES oo ens This has been such a wicked fellow, that I believe I shall never more go to _ confess, What think you, hostess ? HOSTESS, As- for myself I shall. continue my visits to my old curate, wha, is, not.very curious,

156 JAMES THE FATALIST curious, and .who does not hear what one says to him. JAMES. Suppose we drink to your curate’s health ? HOSTESS. For this I give you credit, for he is a good man; he allows the boys and girls to dance on Sundays and festival days, and he permits men and women to come to my house, provided they | don’t get drunk. Here is to my cuvate ! JAMES. To your curate ! HOSTESS. Our

ladies had no doubt that the man

AND HIS MASTER, 157 man of God would ventureimmediately to deliver a letter to his penitent, which was done, but with what management ! He did not know from whom it came, he presumed that it might.be from some kind and charitable soul, who had discovered their misery, and who was proposing to them means of relief'; he had frequently deliveredetters of a similar nature. You are wise, madam, your mother is prudent, and I require that you open it in her presence. Mademoiselle Duquenoi took the letter, and delivered it to her mother, who passed it immediately to Madame de la Pommeraye. Fortified by this paper, she made the priest wait upon 'her, loaded him with the reproaches which he merited, and threatened to lay his conduct before his superiors, if ever she heard any thing concerning him. . Ia

458 JAMES THE FATALIs? In this 'letter the Marquis launchéd out into an eulogium upon his own pérson, and-that of Mademoiselle Dirquénoi, painted the violence of the passion which: he had conceived fot her, and _ made some bold propositions, amounting to no less than to carry her off by foree. _After having read this lecture to thé priest, Madame de la Pommeiaye sent fot the Marquis to her. house, represented to him how unworthy his-cons du was of a gentleman, and how much she had been exposed—shewed him his letter, protested thatin spite of the tender friendship in which they were united; she would consider it an indispensable duty to produce it in a court of justicé, | or to deliver it back to Madame Du-quenoi if any incident befel her daughter,

AWD RYIS-'MASTER.: = 1.54 tet. Ah !-Marquis, said she:to him, love corrupts your heart; you must have beerr born under some inauspicious star, since. what is the 'souitce of great actions; : ia others inspires you only: wich'sentimentd which degrade you. And what have these poor women done, that 'ignominyt shouldbe added to their misery ?' Mise the girl's beauty and her love of virtue: make you become her persecutor ? Does it become you to make her curse one of the fairest

boons- of heaven? Or when did T tierit: being made: your -zecom~ plice? Coiite, “Marquis, throw ' yourselfi at my’ feet, ask my pardon, and: sweur tol me‘ that: your will suffer my ill fated friends to live'in peace . . ‘Fhe: Marquis promised’ to her that’ he: would. atrenapec nothing Without’ consulting’ her, bur protested that he must Kavethe pirkae any price. 3 The

160 JAMES THE FATALIST ~ ‘The Marquis was by no means faithful to his promise. The mother was informed of the business; he did not - hesitate to address her upon the subject. He avowed his criminal-intentions, he offered a considerable sum, besides assurances of future provision, and along with his letter he sent a casket of rich jewels. _ The three ladies held a council, the mother and the daughter were disposed to accept the offer, but this did not corféspond with the views of Madame de Ia Pommeraye.. She reminded them of the promise which they had given her, threatened to discover every thing, and to the great mortification of our devotees, the younger of whom took away the ear-rings which pecans her so well, the

AND HIS MASTER,. 161 the. casket and the letter were returned with a haughty and indignant answer. Madame de Ja Pommeraye complained to the Marquis of the little regard that he had paid to his promises, The Marquis excused himself upon the indecency of employing her on sucha commission, Marquis! Marquis ! said Madame de la Pommeraye to him, I have already informed you, and I again repeat it, you are on the wrong scent ; but there is no time for preaching— words will be of no avail, there is no other alternative... The Marquis confessed that he entertained the same sentiments with her, and asked her permission to make one more trial ; it was to settle a considerable annuity upon both their lives: to share his fortune with the two ladies, and to give them a lifeVOL. I, N rent,

162 JAMES THE FATALIST rent of one of his town and countty houses. You may-make the trial, said the Marchioness, I prohibit only the use of violent measures

; but, believe me, my friend, honour and virtue, when they are sincere, are inestimable in the eyes of those who are fortunate enough to pos-sessthem. Your new offers will be attended with no better success than. the former ; I know the ladies, and I could pledge myself for the purity of their conduct. The new propositions were made. Another council was held by the three Jadies. The mother and the daughter waited in silence the decision of Madame de la Pommeraye. She took a short turn without speaking. No, no, said she, this will not satisfy my wounded heart... And no sooner had she pronounced her negative than the two ladies

AND HIS MASTER, 163. ladies burst into a flood of tears, threw -themselves at her feet, and represented to her how mortifying it was for them to reject an immense fortune, which it was in their power to accept without any disagreeable consequence. Madame de' Ja Pommeraye drily replied to them: Do youthink that what I have done has been onyour account? whatdoI owe you? Is it notin my power to send you both back to your late situation ? If what he offers be too much for you, it is too little for me. Write, Madam, the answer which I shall dictate to you, and let it be dispatched in my sight... The ladies returned still more frightened than distressed. — JAMES. The woman is possessed by. the devil, what would she be at?—-What! is not a decline of affection sufficiently punishM 2 od

164 JAMES THE FATALIST ed by the sacrifice of one half of a large fortune? MASTER, . James, you have never been a woman, still less a virtuous woman ; and, from your own character, you form a false estimate of that of Madame de la Pommeraye? If I must confess what I think, I am afraid that the marriage of the Marquis des Arcis with a woman of pleasure is decreed on high. JAMES. — Oh, if it be decreed on high, it will certainly take place. HOSTESS, The Marquis was not long in repairing to the house of Madame de la Pommetaye. Well, says i to him, what * MARQUIS,

AND HIS-MASTER; 165 MARQUIS. They have been made and Tejected.—I now

quite despair of success. I wish I could tear this unfortunate passion from my heart, that I could tear my heart out, but I cannot. Marchioness, look at me, cannot you see some traits of resemblance between this girl and me? . MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. I never mentioned it, but I have perceived a likeness. However this is not the point; what do you resolve to do? MAR@UIS, I can come to no resolution; I sometimes am seized with a desire to step into a post-chaise and to drive to the ex‘tremities of the earth, a moment after my heart sinks within me; I am, as it were, M 3 annihilated,

160 JAMES THE FATALIST ~ annthilated, my head swims, I become stupid, I know not what to make of myself. . MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. . T do not advise you to travel; it is not worth while to go to Jerusalem, to have - the pleasure of returning .. . Next morning, the Marquis wrote to the Marchioness that he was setting off for the country, that he would stay there as long as he could, and begged her to -do him a service, with his female friends, if an opportunity occurred. The absence was short, he returned with the resolution of marrying her. JAMES. This poor Marquis ! I quite pity him. MASTER.

AND‘HIS MASTER. - 167. MASTER. So do not I. HOSTESS, He alighted at Madame. de la Pommeraye’s door. She was abroad.. On her return she found thé Marquis lolling in an easy chair, his eyes shut, and absorbed in deep meditation.—Ah}! ' Marquis, are you here? The country has not had very lasting charms for you. —No, replied he,I am happy no where, and I come determined upon the most consummate act of folly, which a man of my estate, my age, and of my character can commit. But it is better to marry than to endure this torture. III marry. | M4 MAD,

168 JAMES THE FATALIST MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. Marquis, it is a step of much importance, and requires consideration. MARQUIS. I know of only one, but it is a weighty one; I cannot be more unhappy~than I am. MAD. DE LA

POMMERAYE, You may be wrong. JAME 5, The traiteress ! MARQUi 8. Here then, at last, my friend, is a hegociation in which I think you may embark with honour. See the mother and the daughter; interrogate the mother,

AND HIS MASTER, —-:169 ther, sound the heart of the daughtet, and communicate t to 0 them my intention, MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE, Softly, Marquis. I thought.I knew enough of them to transact ang business which has hitherto passed between you; but now that the happiness of my friend is at stake, he will permit me to take ‘a nearer inspection of their chatacters. I will inform myself of their country, and I promise you I will trace every step of their progress during their abode in Paris, hg MARQUIS. These precautions appear tO me superfluous. Women in misery, who could resist the baits which I laid for these must be most extraordinary creatures,

170° JAMES THE FATALIST creatures. With the offers I made them, I could obtain the favours of a duchess. Besides, have you not said yourself .. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. I have said every thing you please ; but, notwithstanding this, permit me to satisfy myself. JAMES. The —— !-the jade! the fiend ! and how could he attach himself to such a woman ? = MASTER. And why seduce her, and then abandon her ? HOSTESS. Why cease to love her, without rhime or reason ? JAMES.

AND HIS MASTER. | 171 JAMES, (Pointing to heaven with bis finger). Ah! my Master ! MARQUIS. Well, Marchioness, will not you marry also ? MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. Whon,, if you please ? 4 MARQUIS. The little Count; he isa man of wit birth and fortune. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. And who is to answer for his fidelity? You, perhaps! a M AR

172 JAMES THE FATALIST MARQUIS, . No; but it is easy to forget a husband’s infidelity. — i MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE. Granted ; but, perhaps I may be singular enough to take offence at it, and Tam vindictive. MARQUIS, Well; you

will take your vengeance ; that is understood. We shall have a common lodging, and form a most agreeable society of four. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYE, All this is very fine; but I am. not ‘married yet. The only man that perhaps I would have tempted ‘to marry .. MAR

- AND HiS “MASTER. | 173. MARQUIS, | Was me. .. MAD. DE LA POMMERAYR, My confessing it now is of no cons sequence, MARQUiS. And why not have told me ? MAD. DE LA POMMERAY#.. The event justifies ‘my silence. She whom you are going to see is in every respect better suited to you. - pe HOSTESS. Madame de la Pommeraye made out her information as minutely and as speedily as she pleased. She produced to the Marquis the most flattering attestations. She got them in Paris, and she

174 JAMES THE FATALIST she got them in the country. She asked of the Marquis still another fortnight, in order that she might enter into a fresh investigation. This fortnight seemed to him an eternity ; at last the Marchioness was obliged to yield to his impatience and his entreaties. The first interview was at the house of her female friends; every thing there was settled ; the banns were published,- the contract signed ; the Marquis made a present of a superb diamond to Madame de la Pomineraye, and the marriage was consummated. JAMES. What a plot, and what vengeance ! MASTER. _ Jt 1s inconceivable ! 2 JAMES.

“ AND HIS MASTER, 175 JAMES. ‘Deliver me from the discovery of the nuptial night, and then no great harm is to be feared. - . MASTER. Silence, fool ! HOSTESS. The wedding night passed very well. JAMES. T should think... HOSTESS, Think on what your Master has just said to you .. . Saying this, she smiled, passed her hand over James’s face, and squeezed his nose... But it was the morrow. . . JAMES,

176- JAMES THE FATALISY JAMES. ~The morrow was not like the night ? HOSTESS. Not altogether. Next morning Madame de la Pommeraye wrote a note to

the Marquis, requesting to see him at her house, on important business. The Marquis waited upon her of course. She received him with a countenance, in which indignation was forcibly depicted. Her address to him was not long ; it was as follows : * Marquis, learn to know me. If * other women valued themselves enougli ‘to feel a resentment like mine, such ‘people as you would be less frequent. * You obtained the affection of a virtu, 3 ous

AND HIS MASTER- - 177 ‘ous woman, whom you knew not how ‘to. preserve. ‘This: woman.is. “myself. ‘She has avenged; herself upon -you, by ‘making you marry.one who is worthy ‘of ‘you. Instantly quit my house, and go ‘to the Hamburgh Hotel, in the rue Tra* versiere, where you Will be informed of ‘ the foul profession which your wife and * your. mother-in-law have followed for “ten years, under the name of d’Aisnon.’ ‘The surprise and-consternation of the _, poor Marquis cannot.be described. He did. not-know: what to think; but his uncertainty only. lasted the time of his going from, one end of the town to the | other. He did not return homé all that day; he wandered i in the streets; His mother- in-law and his wife suspected what had happened. At the first knock at the door, the mother-in-law retired VOL. 11 N to me

178 JAMES THE FATALIST to her apartment and locked herself in ; his wife waited his comitig in alohe. At the approach of her husband, she read in his countenafice the fury which he felt. She threw herself at’ his feet; her eyés fixed on the floor, Without uttering a word.—Retire, said he to-her, infamous wretch ! Get you gone! ... She attempted to raise herself up, but ‘she fell upon her face, with her arms stretched upon the ground, between the feet of the Marquis.=Sir, said ‘she to him, ‘trample me under your feet ! crush me to pieces, for I have ‘deserved it! do with me what you please: only spare my. mother! . . —Retire, replied. the Marquis, retire ! . . Is it not enough that I am-coveted with infamy ? Spare me the commission of a crime ... The " pocr ‘creature continued in the posture in which she lay, and made no answer. The

AND HIS. MASTER, - 179 The Marquis ‘had - seatéd- himself in an‘ easy chair, his face covered with his hands, and his body half leaning "upon the foot of his bed, exclaiming at intervals, Retire ! ... The .unfortunate creature, continuing silent and motionless, excited his surprise; he repeated in asstill, louder tone, Retire ! don’t you hear me? . . He then stooped, endeavouring to push her away, but finding she was senseless and that life was almost gone, he gently raised her up, stretched her on a-couch, afid fixed hié eyes wpon her for a moment, -which -expressed. alternately commiseration and resentment. He raxg the bell; some of the servants came in; they called the female servants, and he desired them to catry their mistress, who. was-taken ‘All, to her apartment, and to give her proper assistance -. .In a few minutes, . nN 2 he

‘180 JAMES THE FATALIST he sent privately to know her situation. They said, that-she had recovered from her first’ swoon ; but that the fainting "fits succeeded one another: so rapidly, “were sO frequent. and-so long, ‘that they could not answer for the event. In an hour or two after, he again sent privately to know how she was. They said, she was almost breathless, and that she had‘been seized: with convulsive fits which were so loud as to be heard in the court. In answer to his third message; which was in the morning, they re‘ported that she had wept a great-deal, that the convulsions had ceased, and that she appeared to be drowsy. . On the following day, the' Marquis ordered. his horses to be put to his carriage, and did not make his appearance for a fortnight, during which time, they did .

" AND HIS MASTER: «181 did not know what was become of::him: Before - his departure, le’ had ‘rade every necessary provision.for the’ mdther and the daughter, and left: orders with the servants-stri€tly to obey their mistress in every thing she desired. In this interval the two: ladies ‘reclianging words ; the datighter sobbing, at times:crying aloud, tearing: her hair, wringing her hands; and ‘her: mother not ‘venturing.to come néar-to conifort her. The one was the figure of despair, the other of obduracy.. The daughter said twenty times to her mother, Mamma, let us get out,

of .this house ; let us make ‘our escape. . The mother as/often resisted’: the proposal, and-replied ; -No, my girl, we imust:--remain: ;:we must see what this-will-cpnie as N3 to;

182 = JAMES. THE FATALIST to : surely he will not kill us... —Oh, would to God, returned the daughter, that it were already done! .. Her mother would then say, You had better be silent than speak so foolishly. * On his return, the Marquis shut him~ self up in his closet, and wrote two [etters, one to his wife, another to his mother-in-law. The latter repaired the same day to a convent of Carmelites, in the neighbouring.town, where she died a few days ago. Her daughter dressed herself, and repaired to her-husband’s apartment, where probably. she had been ‘desired to. come. At the door she threw herself down upon-her knees.—Rise, said the Marquis to her .- Instead of rising, she advanced towards him upon her knees; she trembled at every joint ; her hair was dishevelled,

AND HIS MASTER. 183 velled, her body. a. little inclined, her. arms lifted. up, hep head: raised, her eyes watching his looks, and her face streaming with, tears. Jt seems to me, said she to him, (a sigh stopping her utterance at every word) as if your. heart, which had good cause to be i irritace abtain cetnpsston: Sir, I beg you will not so: saon hasten to forgive me. So many virtuous girls have become bad wives, that, perhaps, I shall be an instance of the contrary, Iam not yet worthy to appear in your presence ; pray let me only hope for pardon. Keep me at a distance from you; inspect my conduct ; judge of it as it deserves:: too happy, a thousand times too happy, if you, condescend sometimes to ‘send: for me! Allot, me some obScUre.corner. in your house; in which NA you

184 9 JAMES THE FATALIST you will permit me-to dwell, and there Yshall reniain without a murmur. Ah! could I divest myself of the name-and title, which they have made me usurp, and afterwards die the moment that you are satisfied! I have ‘been left to commit, under the influence of weakness, of seduction, ‘of

“authority, of threats, an action of infamous desert ; but do not think, sir, that I'am-depraved : Iain not ; since I did not hesitate to appear before you, in obedience to your command, ‘and to presume to raise my eyes, and to address you. -Ah! ‘could you read the secret ‘sentiments ‘of my, ‘heart, and see how different they are ‘to those of women of a similar character! ‘Vice has been- incidental to me ; it “has | not ‘incorporated ‘with n my. nature, T know my own ‘heart’; and, it is a piece “of j justice which ‘| owe to’ myself, to say,

: AND - HIS “MASTER: gate 385 say, that from.my dispositions, my sentiments.and my. charatter, -was:born worthy of the~honour..of:beiig connected with you. Ah! had I been at liberty. to see:you, I should only: have needed to say one word, and.TI believe I should have had the coutage to. speak it... Sir, dispose of me as you think proper ; make. your ‘servants come in ; let them: strip: me, andzthrow;me- out into the street, under the darkness of night; I subscribe to’whatever.yo ordain:. - Let the fatejto which you,doom ame; be :whatever.it:may, 1 submit: tovit ; let::some ~seqiestered; cottage, ‘-or..the obscurity . of a-cloister; con¢eal.me-for ever from your sight; speak-the word, and thither Icwjll go. Your::.happipiness. is ..not: dingo: losts.: you ean bite Maeve. - Mea dad Beiey : Rise,

386 JAMES THE FATALIST Rise, said the ‘Marquis to her in avsoft tone ofvoice, I have: forgiven — you. At the moment-even when I was smarting. under a sense of. injury, I Tespected my wife.in-you: not a single word has escaped me tending to humble her; or, at least, if there has, I repent of it, and protest that. she shall never hear. another to that effed,:-if: she Tee member that she never can‘ render her husband unhappy without being miserable herself. Be virtuous, be happy, and make me so. Rise, pray you,:my wife, rise, and embrace me! Marchio‘ness, rise! _you: are ‘hot in your seats Madame d’Arcis, rise ue Law Whilst he thus spoke to tes she concealed her face.with-her hands, and rested her head upon -the knees: of the Marquis; but, at the word, My wife! At

AND HIS MASTER: 187 at the name. of. Madame -d'Arcis! she suddenly sprang up, and threw herself upon the Marquis; she held him in her embrace, half suffocated with grief and joy; she then tore -herself from him ; threw herself upon' the ground, and kissed his feet—Ah ! said the Matquis to her, I have forgiven 'you; I have told you of it, and I see that you will not believe it.—I never can believe it, replied she.— The Marquis added, in truth, I believe I never shall have cause to repent it; and that this Pommeraye, instead of avenging 'herself, has done' me an essential service. My dear, go and dress yourself, while your servants are employed 'in packing up your trunks, We will set off for my estate, where we 'shall live till. we. can return here without any 'unpleasant consequence to you or to myself .. : They

188 JAMES THE FATALIST They were absent three years together from the capital. . JAMES, And I'll wager, these three years seemed like a single day, and that the "Marquis made one_of the best of husbands, .and had one of the best wives in the world. MASTER, Vil go halves with you, but, in stats I am ata loss to know- for what reason ; for I am not satisfied with. the conduct of this girl, in the course of the plot which, was carried on by Madame de la Pommerayé, and her mother.- Without a moment's. fear, without the smallest share of doubt; without ene pang of remorse, I have: seen. her willingly besome a party:in this long scene of enormity.

AND HIS MASTER. 180 mity. Whatever she was 'desired, she did not hesitate to perform, she weiit to confess, she communicated, she 'made game of religion and of its ministers. She appears to me to be as dreadful; as ponrempanicsas wicked as the other two . « Hostess, -you ate a good 'historian, but you are not profoundly versed-in the dramatic art. If you had wished: that you should have given her openness oe character, and represented her fo: uS.as the 'innocent and unwilling vidim of her mother and de la Pommeraye; 'she should have been introduced as: con strained by cruel treatment, in spite of her. own inclination, :to concur 'in'a scene of iniquity which -lasted''for a year; and we should have been thus prepared for this

woman’s reconciliation with her husband. .When a person. is 3 introduced

190 JAMES THE FATALIST introduced into a scene, her character should be uniform; now I ask of you, my charming hostess, whether the character of the girl who conspires with ' these two profligates, quite corresponds with that of the woman whom we have beheld a prostrate supplicant at her husband’s feet? You have transgressed the rules of Aristotle, of Horace, of Vida, and of Bossu. HOSTESS. . I know not what is crooked * from what is‘straight. I have told you the circumstances as they happened, without either omitting or adding any thing. And who knows what passed in the heart of this young girl, and whether, at the moments when she seemed * Bossu signifies crooked, and the observation " of the Hostessis a quibble upon the word; which is Idst in the translation. % : to

AND ‘HIS “MASTER. 19t. to act with the least weight upon her spirits, she was not perhaps corroded by secret FEMOrses - ae cee oh s ed oe JAMES... ae . Froscees fur this time I must agree in opinion with my Master, who will pardon me;.as it happens so:seldom. 1 know nothing of-his:Bossu; and, of the other . gentlemen: ‘whom “he mentioned, I-am as ignorant “but if Madémoiselle-Duquenoi, formerly d’Aisnon, had: been 2 a good pat would have shewn i ag c.: « n'O-S TR's 8, , Good girl or bad, guch”an «Neale wife does she make, that her husband is as happy with her as a king, and would not'exichahige her for atly other. ae ae S44 MASTER. I wish him joy of it; he has been more fortunate than wise. 3 HOSTE35.

192 JAMES THE FATALIST HOSTESS. And for myself I wish: you sad night; I must -bé last: out of bed at night and first up in the morning. What a cursed profession! Good night, gentlemen, good night. I promised you, I know not what introduced it, the history of.a singular marriage, and I thiak-I have kept my word with you. Mr. James, I think you'll have little difficulty in falling asleep, for your eyes are more than half shut. Good night, Mr. James. MASTER. _ Well, tack ess, is there no way: of getting acquainted with your own adventures ? HOSTESS. No. of

JAMES,

AND HIS MASTER: 193 : JAMES, You have a most insatiable thirst: ‘for stories! 4 rs ‘ MASTER. True, I have; they both instruct and amuse me. A good si aoa is rately to be found. JAMES. James, this is the very reason why I don’t like stories, unless I make them myself. MASTER, ; You would rather da nonsense. than be silent. «TAM ES. I would. VOL, II. 0 MASTER.

94 JAMES THE FATALIST | MASTER. :“JAnd-I svould- rather hear nonsense, than hear tone at all. . TAME 8. Phat diapoatiok sets both of u us: very much at our ease.— I know not how the Hostess, James, and. ‘his Master had disposed’ of their iiriderstandings, that they could not discover one of the arguments’ which might have been adduced in favour of Mademoiselle Duquenoi. Might not this lady have been acquainted with the . artifices of Madame de la Pommeraye before the catastrophe of the plot? Might she not have preferred accepting the offers rather than the hand of the eet ee : _~ Mar

AND HIS MASTER. :- = 105: Marquis, ;and.to possess, him as,a lover. rather than a;-husband? ‘Was she -not. continually under the menaces and the despotism of the Marchioness ?. Can shie be blamed for the: horrible aversion she entertained. for a‘state.of:infamy:? And. © if you chuse the'altérnative.of esteething : her more on this account, in extricating herself from it; can you require. iiich delicacy, much scruple in the choice of the means? = om eas foe “And you clic: ‘reader, that it is more difficult to. make the’ apology .of Madame de la Pommeraye? You perhaps would, have liked better to. have heard .on this subject James and his Master ; but they. had to speak of ‘so many things. more interesting, that this, in ab probability, would. have . been in OD .s. neglected.

196 JAMES THE FATALIST neglected. Permit ie then, for. a momint, to consider the point. You fly into a rage at the name of Madame de la: Pommeraye, and you ex-. claim, Ah! the horrible woman! Ah! ~ the hypocrite! Ah! the abandoned. wretch

!—-No exclamation, no.anger, no partiality; let us reason. Every day.actions more foul are perpetrated without | genius. You may hate, you can dread: Madame de la Pommeraye, but you will not despise her. Her vengéeance:is atto-. cious, but it is not sullied by any' 'miotive™ of interest. You have not beén informsed that she had thrown i in-the face of' the- Marquis - the beautiful diamond: which he had presented her, but she'didso; I know it from the: surest- information. 'Her object was neither to increase her fortune fio to acquire titles of

AND. HIS MASTER. "197 'of-honour. Suppése: this. woman: had 'don': as much to obtain fora dusband 'the reward of his services ;: had she: pros'tituted herself toa minister orto aprincipal secretary.for a ribband of a regi'ment; to. the keeper of the registerof "behefices: fora rich abbey;++all this - would appear quite common: 'the pra¢'tice. 'would .be for your interest; "and - when she avenges herself. of perfidy, you revolt.at her conduct, instead of .perceiving that her. resentment-offends:ydu -only because: you'aré capable of expeniencing one equally profound, or-because you lightly esteem the virtue of women. - Have you at all refleéted 'upon. the sacrifices which Madame 'de 'la. Pommetaye made to the Marquis ?: I'will not say that her purse had been opened 'to him upon every occasion, and that, for cree years, he had kept no other a 3 house,

198 JAMES THE FATALIST house, no other table but hers;.at this you would shake your head; but she -had accommodated herself to all -his ca-prices, to all his desires ;. to please him ~ she. had reversed the whole plan of her life.. She enjoyed: the highest consideration in the world from the purity of her' morals, and she had degraded her- self to the common level. ~ When she had accepted the hommage of the Mar-quis.des Arcis, people said of her:. At _Jastthis wonderful Madame de la Pomme-raye has become one ofus .. . She'had remarked around her the ironical smile, . She had heard the sarcastic' joke, and - often.they obliged her.to blush and look downwards. She had swallowed all-the cup. of bitterness prepared: for those women whose correct conduct has too Jong been a satire upon the loose morals _of

those by whom they are surrounded. phe

- AND, His, MASTER. 199 She. had supported all. the: scandalous, | notoriety; by.. which, they: avenge, thems, selyes. of those: impudent iprudes,.who, set up for virtue. -She was. proud, and: she would ‘rather have died i in fortunes than have launched into the world with the contempt. of a deserted. mistress: and the shame of abandoned | virtue, She was approaching: that period ‘when the loss of a lover is no longer to be Sepair~ ed. Such was her character, when this event condemned, her to ‘regret.andto solitude. A; man. ‘strikes. another, for a blow for giving him the lie, and. shall a virtuous woman, ruined, dishonoured, | betrayed, not.be permitted , to consign ‘the-traitor to the arms ; of a: courtesan} Ah, : reader, you. are, INETY, cool in.your praise, ; and yery’ severe ‘Igyyour. censure. But. you. will tell.me itjs;more the man; ner than the action for which I blame . oA - the

400- sats THE FATALIST the -Marchioness. I- cannot excuse a fesentment which is nourished so long; & tissue of deceit and falsehood which lasts near a year. ‘No-more do I, nor James, nor his Maser, :nor the hostess. But you pardon every thing which proceeds from a first emotion,, and I will tell you that if the first emotion of - others, in short that of Madame de la Pommeraye, and: women of her character, is long, their soul remains sometimes all ‘their fife the Same, as at the first moment of the i injury ;- and what i inconvenience, what injustice is there i in this? I see- nothing which it can prodace but treachery ofa less common nature, and I should highly ; approve a Jaw condemning to the arms of courte: sans, hint who has: ‘seduced and abana: a virtoous sont ‘consigning ~ the

': AND HIS: MASTER. ”” 201 the common men’ to the common women. ss : ee ” While I thus indulge’ in this diseussion , James's Master snores, as if he had been my hearer; and James, the muscles ef whose legs refused to perform theit service, staggered about the room in his shit and bare-footed, overthrows every thing he encounters and awakes his Master, who says to him (peeping between the curtains)

James, you are drunk. —Or very near it—At what hour'do you ‘propose going to bed ?—Immediately, sit 3 it is because there is... because there is... What 1s ?—In this bottle some: of the wine left which might evaporate, T entertain a horror for bottles kept after the corks are drawn; it would fecur to. me after, I had lain down in bed, and prevent me from closing an. eye, Our

"202 JAMES - THE. FATALIST Our hostess, on my. faith, is an excellent woman, and her Champagne excellent wine, it were a pity to let it evaporate... . Now I have got it under.coyer, and it shall no longer evaporate... Stuttering in this manner barefooted and: in his shirt, he had swallowed two _or three bumpers, without punctuation, as he expressed it, that is to say, from the bottle to the glass, and from the glass to the mouth .. . . There are two ‘versions upon the subject of what folJowed .after he had. extinguished. the lights. Some maintain that-he fell ” a groping along the walls without being able to regain his bed, and that he said, Upon my faith it is here no longer, or am not to find it again; in either case IT must do without it; and:that he then adopted the expedient of stretching himself

AND HIS MASTER; 208 himself upon chairs. Others. say that it had.been decreed ‘on high :that he should entangle his feet in: the chairs, that he should fall hiswhole length upon the floor and :their remain. . Of these two reasons, to-morrow. or the day: after to-morrow, when: your head: is. peeled: you may chuse which — esuia Our two avellens ‘ihe tad cone late to bed and ‘their heads -a. little heated with wine, slept. till far . in -the day ; James upon the floor, or upon -chairs according to ‘the version,. which -you prefer ; his. Master_more at easé ‘in his bed. The hostess came up stairs and told them that the day would not -be good, but that, even though the -. weather: permitted. them .to continue: their journey, they would risk their lives, or would be stopped by the swell of

204 JAMES THE FATALSST ‘of the waters of the stream they had to ‘cross, and that several men on horse‘back, who would not believe her, had ‘been compelled to

turn back. The Master said to James: James, what shall we do? James answered, in the first place we will breakfast with our hostess who will give us her advice. The hostess protested that it was wiscly -thought. Breakfast was served up. “The hostess asked nothing better than ‘to be merry. James’s Master would ‘not have been been backward, but “James now began to be restless, he ‘eat with a very bad grace, he drank ‘Tittle, he was silent. The last symptom was the most unpleasant of all; this "was the consequence of the bad night he had passed, and the bad bed he had occupied. He complained of pains in his limbs; his hoarse voice indicated

‘AND HIS MASTERS... 205: dicated a sore throat. : His Master ad=: vised him to go to-bed, but he refused.. The hostess proposed some soup with. onions. He desired'a.fire to be lighted: _ in the room for he felt 4 shivering; he: told them to prepare him some watergruel, and to bring him a bottle of white. wine; all which was instantly executed. The hostess was now gone and James left téte-d-t¢le with his Master. The latter going often to the window,’ would say, what devilish bad weather!: looked at his watch (for it was the only one in which he -placed confidence) to see what o'clock it was, took his pinch. of snuff and repeated the same thing every hour, exclaiming each. time; what devilish weather! turning to James, and adding, what. finé opportunity to resume and compleat the history of vont athours! But we speak indifferently

206 JAMES THE FATALIST rently of love or of any thing else when we are ill. -Look, examine yourself. If you are able to continue, then continue; if not, drink ee iat Sa and si ’ James maintained, that silence by no means agreed with him; that he was a talkative animal ; that the principal advantage of his situation, that which touched hima the most, was the liberty of making amends for the dozen years which he had passed with the gag in the housé of his gentle, rest his soul! MASTER. 7 Speak then, since it is agreeable to both of us. You had got the length of some dishonourable proposition or other of the surgeon’s wife: the object. of it, was,

AND HIS MASTER.. -.: 207 was, I- believe, to turn out the surgeon who attended the castle, and to install the husband inher place.- * SAMES. Ihave it; but a single moment, if you please. Let us humectate ! James filled a large bason with wateretuel, into which he poured a little white wine, and swallowed the dose. It was a receipt which he had got from. his captain, and which Mr, Tissot, who had it from James, recommends in his Treatise of Popular Disorders. The white wine, said James and Mr. Tissot, makes you p—s, is diuretic, correéts the insipidity.of the water-gruel, and maintains the tone of the stomach and intestines. James, having drank his watergruel, : continued: JAMES.

908 JAMES THR FATALIST JAMES. Conctive me now sallied out of the surgeon's house, placed in the carriage, arrived at the castle, and surrounded by all its inhabitants. MASTER. Were you known there ? | JAMES. Assuredly ! Don’t you recollect a certain woman with a cruise of oil ? MASTER. Very well. JAMES, This woman ‘was accustomed to do little jobs for the intendant and his domestics. Jane had cried up, at the castle,

AND HIS MASTER. 200 Castle, the aét of compassion which I had performed: my good work had reached the ears of the master. They had taken care to inform him too of the kicks and cuffs with which I had been rewarded at night upon the high way. He had given orders to find me out, and convey me to his house. I was how there. Iwas gazed at, examined. and admired. Jane embgaced. and thanked me.—Let him be commodiously lodged, said the master to his servants, and let him want for nothing. To the family surgeon ; You will attend him assiduously ... Every thing was punctually executed. Well now, my Master, who knows what is decreed on high? Let any body now say, that it is well, or that it it is ill done, to give away our money ; that it is a misfortune to be knocked down. . . WithVOL. II. _?P , out

210 JAMES THE FATALIST out these two events, M. Desglands had Never heard of vas: MASTER. M. Desglands, lord of Riiaieatl what were you in the castle of

Miremont? at the house of my old friend, the father of M. Desforges, intendant of the province ? JAMES. The very same. And the tall, handsome brown girl with black eyes... MASTER. Is Denise, Jane’s daughter ! JAMES. She herself. MASTER, You are right. She is one of the loveliest and most virtuous creatures within

_ AND HIS MASTER; 211 within twenty leagues round. Myself and the greater part ‘of those who frequented the castle of Desglands, had in vain employed every means to seduce her ; and not one of us but would have committed great fooleries for her, on condition: of her committing a trifling piece. of folly in our favour. James making no reply, his Master said to him, What are. you thinking of ? What are you about ? JAMES. Tam saying my prayers, MASTER. What ! do you pray ? JAMBS., Sometimes. Cre a, Sn han Ml P29 MASTER,

212 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER, And what do you say ? JAMES. I say; ‘Thou, whoever thou art, ‘who formed the Grand Register, and ‘ whose finger traced every dectee that ‘is inscribed on high! thou hast ever ‘known what was best for me; let thy * will be done. Amen.’ MASTER. And might you not do just as w ell to hold your tongue ? JAMES. Perhaps yes; perhaps no. I pray at all adventures; and whatever ensues, I would neither rejoice nor lament, if I could be calm; but Iam violent

AND HIS MASTER. 213 violent and rash; I forget my principles, or the lessons of my captain; I weep and lavgh like a fool. | MASTER. What! did your captain never weep or laugh ? JAMES. — Seldom. . Jane one morning brought me her daughter ; and, addressing herself first to me ; Sir, says she, you are now in a splendid castle, where you will be a little better off than at the house of your surgeon. At the beginning especially: Oh! you will be wondrous well attended! but, I know what domestics are; I have been a long while in that situation. By degrees, their ardent zeal will subside. Their masters will think no more of you and P 3 of

QI4 JAMES THE FATALIST of your illness, continues she. You will be forgotten, so perfectiy forgotten, that if you should take a fancy to die of hunger, you might succeed ... Then turning to her daughter; Attend, Denise, said she, I wish you to visit this honest man four times a day ; in. ‘the morning, at dinner time,at five o'clock, and at supper time. You are to obey him as you would obey me. Remember, I have told you, and do not fail, MASTER. Do you, know what happened to poor Desglands > ane J AMES.. No, sir, but ifthe wishes I have formed for his prosperity have not been fulfilled, it is not because they were not sincere. It-was he that presented me ‘to the commander of the Boulaye, who perished

. AND HIS.MASTER.: '. Q15 perished in his passage to. Malta.; ‘The commander of the Boulaye, placed:me in the service of his-elder brother;, the captain, who is now.-perhaps dead. of ‘the fistula. The captain transferred me to his youngest brother, advocate-general of Toulouse, who went mad and. wasconfined by his friends. M. Pascal, advocategeneral of Toulouse, presented: me: to the Count de Tourville, who, prefetred letting his beard grow under the habit of'a Capuchin, to exposing his life, The Count de Touryille placed’ ine in the service of the Marchioness du Belloy, who eloped to London with a foreigner. The Marchioness ‘du Belloy presented me to one of her cousins, who ruined himself with women, and went to the Indies, This -cousin -ofher’s recommended me to M. Heressant, :by. pfofession a usurer, who kept the money PA of

216 §«=- SAMES THE FATALIST of M. de Rusai, doctor of the Sorbonne, who placed me in the service of Mademoiselle Isselin, whom you kept, and who placed me with you, to wham | am to be indebted for a provision in my old age ; for you promised me so, if I remained with you, and there is no probability of our separation. James was made for you, and you were made for James. MASTER. But, James, you had passed through a great number of families in a very short time. JAMES, It is true ; I was sometimes turne off, MASTER, ‘Why? JAMES,

AND .HIS MASTER, 217 JAMES. | Because I was born a great take, and the people I served were fond of silence. ‘They were not like you, who would give me no thanks for holding my tongue. I had precisely the fault which suited your humour. But what is this that happeried to M. Desglands ? Tell me that, while I prepare a bason of water-gruel, | MASTER, You lived in his castle, and never heard of his plaister. JAMES, No, MASTER, That adventure will do when we are en the way; the other is short. He had

218 JAMES: THE FATALIST 4 had made his fortune at play. He attached himself to'a woman whom you may have seen at the ‘castle, a woinan of spirit, but ‘serious, silent, original and sevére.- One day, this’ woman: said to him, Either you-love me better than play, and, in that case, ‘givé’ me your word -of honour, that you will never play; or you love play more than me ; and, ‘if so, speak to: me no more of your passion, and play as much as you: please... Desglands gave his word of honour that he would never play more. —Neither high nor low ? —:Neither high nor low. They had lived’ together about ten years in the castle, which you know, when Desglands being called up to town upon.an affair of consequence, had the misfortune to meet at the house of his notary, one “of his old fellow : gamesters, who toox him to dine at

° AND HIS MASTERS 219 at a gaming house, where, at a single sitting, he lost ‘all he possessed. His mistress ‘was inflexible.: She was‘rich ; and, after settling upon Desglands 4 mioderate annuity, she Separated from him for ever, SAME I am very sorry. to hear it ; he was a gentleman, es | MASTER, | Well now, James, you are ‘fixed -in the house of Desglands, . beside Denise, and Denise ordered by her mother to pay you at least four visits a day. The ‘baggage'to prefera James! _ JAMES, A James !--a James, sir, is aman like another, . 3 MASTER,

230 JANES THE FATALIST MASTER. James, you are mistaken ; a James is not a man like another. JAMES, He sometimes is better than another. MASTER. James,

you forget yourself! Resume the history-of your amours ; and remember that you are, and ever will be, no more than a James. JAMES. If, in the cottage where we met the robbers, James had not been a little better than his Master... MASTER. James, you are impertinent; you abuse

AND. HIS MASTER,: 24% abuse my goodness. If I have been ‘guilty of the folly of taking you out of your place, 1 know very:well how to send you back to it again. James, take your bottle and your bason, and go down stairs. JAMES. You are pleased to say sa, sir; I feel myself very well here, and Iwill not.go down stairs. MASTER. _ Isay, you shall go down stairs. JAMES, Iam sure you don’t say true. What, sit, after having accustomed me for ten years to live on the footing of a cempanion ... MASTER.

943. JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. ‘T think proper to put an end to this. JAMES. After having suffered all my imper‘tinenices!... . . MASTER. I ititend te suffer them no longer. JAMES. After seating me at table by your side; calling mi¢ your friend !. <. master.="" you="" do="" not="" know="" then="" what="" is="" the="" meaning="" of="" word="" friend="" when="" bestowed="" by="" a="" superior="" upon="" his="" inferior="" james.=""/>

AND HIS MASTER.. 923° JAMES, ~ When it is known that/all your’orders are-not worth a pinch of snuff; till tatified by James: after having coupled ‘your name so close ‘to: mine, that the: one never goes without the other 3 and all the world says, ‘ James. and his: Master !’ all at once you are pleased to separate. them !: -No, ‘sir, that will not be. Itis decreed on high, that as long” as James lives, as long as his Master lives, and even: after they are both dead, it will be said James and his-Master ! MASTER. And I say, James, that you shall go down stairs instantly, because I command you. 1 JAMBs.

294 JAMRS THE FATALIS® J AME 5S. Command mie to do something else, sir, if you have a mihd to be obeyed. Here James’s Master rose, seized him by the collar,

and said gtavely; Go down stairs. James replied coolly, { won't go down stairs. The Master, shaking hit violently, said, Go down, rascal ! Obey me. James again answered coolly ; Rascal as much as you please, but the rascal will not go down stairs. Stop, sir, what I have got on my head I have not on my heel, as the saying is. You are heated to no purpose; Jatnes will stay

AND HIS MASTER, 225 stay where he is, and will not go down stairs, And now James and his Master, who had hitherto contained themselves, both at once fly out, and set a crying, might and main, You shall go down stairs. — T will not go down stairs. —You shall go down stairs—TI will not go down stairs. At this noise, the Hostess came up, and inquired what was the matter; but it was some time before she could obtain an answer. They continued crying, You shall go down stairs.—I will not go down stairs. Then the Master, his heart ready to burst, walked about the room, exclaiming, Was eyer. the like of this seen! ‘The Hostess, astonished and motionless, says, Why,gentle VOL, Ib Q men !

926 JAMES THE FATALIST men! what is the matter? James, without any signs of emotion, replies to the Hostess, It is my Master, whose head is turning: he is mad.—Master ; is a brute, you would say.—James; Any thing you please—The Master to the Hostess; Did you hear him ?—Hostess; He is wrong : but, peace, peace ! one or the other of you speak, and let me know what is the matter.—Master to James; Speak, rascal !—James to Master; Speak yourself. —Hostess to James ; Mr. James, Speak ; your Master commands you; and, after all, a master is a master. James explained the case to the Hostess. The Hostess, after hearing it, says, Gentlemen, will you accept of me as arbiter? James and his Master both together: Most willingly, most willingly. Hus

AND HIS MASTER. 227 Hostess—And you engage, upon your honour, to execute my sentence.--James and his Master; upon my henour, upon my honour . . .The Hostess then seating herself by the tableandassuming the tone and the air ofa grave

magistrate, says: “Having heard the declaration of Mr. James, and agreeable to the facts tending to prove that his Master is a good, a very good, too goed a master: and that James is not a bad servant, though somewhat apt to confound absolute and unalterable possession with occasional gratuitous indulgence: I annul the equality which has been established between them by prescription, and I instantly create it anew. James shall go down stairs, and when he has gone down he shall come up again; he shall resume all the prerogatives which he has hitherto enjoyay ed.

228 JAMES THE FATALIST ed. His Master shall present his hand to him, and say, in a friendly manner: Good day, James, I am very glad to see you again .. . James shall answer, And I, sir, am enchanted again to have found you... And I prohibit them from ever calling this point in question, or the prerogative of the master and servant from ever beiag agitated in future. We determine that the one shall command and the other obey, each as he can, and that the obscurity, which has hitherto prevailed, shall continue with regard to what the one can exact and the other ought to perform.” At the conclusion of this sentence, which she had stolen from some work published upon occasion of a quarrel precisely similar, and when from one end of the kingdom to the other, the Master

AND HIS MASTER. 220 v Master had been heard crying to his servant: You shall go down stairs! and the servant, on his side, exclaiming, I will not go down stairs! Come, said she to James, de you give me your arm without parleying any more .. . James, exclaimed in a piteous tone, It was then decreed on high, that I should go down stairs: to which the hostess: It was des creed on high, that the very moment the charater of master is assumed, you should go down stairs or come up, advance, receile, or remain, and this without ever suffering the feet to resist: the orders of the head. Give me your arm and let my orders be executed. .-. James gave the Hostess his arm, but hardly had they crossed the threshold when the Master threw himself upon James’s neck and embraced him, quitted James to embracé' the ‘Hostess, and ema 3 bracing

230 JAMES THE FATALIST bracing them both, said: It is decréed on high that I shall never part with this original, and that as long as I live he shall be my Master and I shall be his servant ... The hostess added, and as matters seem to go, youi will neither of you find yourselves the worse for it. . The hostess after having appeased this quarrel, which she took to be the first, but which was more than' the hundredth of the same species which had happened, and having re-installed James in his place, went away to look after her affairs, and the Master said to James: Now that we are cool and qualified to judge reasonably, will you not agree? JAMES, I will agree, that when a man_ has given his word-of honour he ought to keeB

AND HIS MASTER. 231. keep it, and that since we promised to the judge, upon our word of honour, not to resume this matter, we ought to speak no more about it. MASTER. You are right. JAMES. But without recurring to this affair, might we not prevent an hundred similar disputes by some equitable arrangement? MASTER. I consent. JAMES, — | Let us then stipulate, first, That whereas it is decreed on high that Iam essential to you, and that whereas I feel and know that you cannot dispense with a3 me,

232 JAMES THE FATALIST me, I will abuse these advantages each, and every time that an opportunity occurs. MASTER. But never in the world, James, have such conditions as these been stipulated. JAMES. Stipulated, or not stipulated, such things have been done at every period, are done at this day, and will be done as long as long as the world endures. Do you imagine that others, as well as you, have not.laboured to oppose this decree, and that you will be more adroit than they? Lay aside this idea, and submit to the law of necessity which you are unable to resist. _ Let us stipulate, adly, That whereas it is as impossible that James should be 3 unace

. AND HIS MASTER. 233 unacquainted with the ascendant, the power which he possesses over his Master, as for his Master, to be ignorant of his weakness and to divest himself of his indulgence, it is necessary that James should be insolent, and

that, for the sake of peace, his Master should take ‘no notice of such behaviour. All this was arranged without our knowledge, all this was sealed on high at the moment when nature formed James and his Master. It was decreed that you should have the title, and that I should enjoy the substarice. If you attempt to oppose yourself to the will of nature, you will come off with the worst. MASTER. But by this reckoning your lot would be far preferable to mine, JAMES,

234 JAMES THE FATALIS?T JAMES. -. Who denies it ? MASTER, But by this reckoning I have only to take your place, and station you in mine. JAMES. _ Do you know what would be the consequence? You would lose the title without obtaining the substance. Let us remain as we are, we are both very well, and let the rest of our life be employed in making a proverb. MASTER, What proverb? JAMES, James manages his Master. We shall be the first to whom the saying will be applied,

AND HIS MASTER. — 235 applied, but it will be repeated of a thousand others far superior to you and me. MASTER. This appears to me hard, very hard. JAMES. My Master, my dear Master! you are going to kick against a point that will only wound you the more sensibly, Such then is the agreement we are to conclude. MASTER, And what constitutes our consent to a necessary law ? JAMES, A great many circumstances. Da you consider it a matter of no importance to know once for all, plainly and distinGly

236 JAMES THE FATALIST distinétly what conduct to observe? Ali our quarrels hitherto have happened only because we have never yet properly explained to each other,.that you were zo call yourself my Master, but that I, in reality, should be yours. You see the terms are now understood, and we have only to regulate ourselves accordingly. ss MASTER. . But where the devil did you learn ail this ? a JAMES. In the great book. Oh! my Master in vain we refle&, meditate, and study all the books in the world, we are but poor scholars if we have not perused the great book... In the afternoon the sun shone clear. Some travellers. warranted the stream to

AND HIs MASTER, =. 437 to be fordablé:’ James werit down stairs, and-his Master-paid the hostess very liberally. “AF the“dcor of the inn, a great number: of travellers whom the bad weather had detained were now assembled, preparing to continue theif journey; among the rest, James and his Master, the man ‘who hall - made the’ foolish marriage, and his companion. The pedestrians take their staffs and wallets, séme adjust themselves in their covered carts or their chaises, the horsemen mount and drink the parting glass. The hostess courteously,’ with a bottle in her hand, presents‘every one with a glass,which she fills,not forgetting herself: Alt pay her compliments, to which she answers with politéness and gayety. They’ clap spurs to their horses, they mutually pay their respects to each other and depart. . | Ik

238 JAMES THE FATALIST It happened that James and his Mas-ter, the Marquis des Arcis, and his companion were pursuing the same way. Of these four personages, the last is the only one with whom you are unacquainted. He was scarcely twenty two or twenty three years of age. The timidity of his temper was displayed in his countenanee. His head inclined a little to his left shoulder; he was silent and almost entirely ignorant “of the customs of the world. If he made . a bow, he inclined the upper part of his body without moving his legs. When seated, he was accustomed to take the skirts of his coat and spread them upon his thighs to keep his hand in, the slits, and to listen to those who spoke to him with his eyes almost shut. By these singularities of manner, James recognized what he was, and approaching his Master,

AND HIS MASTER. 239 Master, whispered in his ear: I will lay awager that this young man has worn the habit of a monk.—And how thiak you so, James?—You will see. Our four travellers proceeded in company, conversing about the rain, the afternoon, the host:and the hostess; of the quarrel in which the Marquis des Arcis was involved on account of Fanny. This famished and ill trained bitch came incessantly and. rubbed herself upon his stockings. After, in vain, attempting to drive her away with his napkio, he had impatiently given: her a violent kick... The

conversation immediately turnéd upon the singular: attachment which some women entertain for animals, Every one-gave. his: opinion ..James's Master addressing him. self

240 SAMES THE FATALIST self to James, says; And you, James, what think you of the subject? James asked his Master if he had never remarked, that however great was the wretchedness of the lower classes, though destitute of bread for themselves, they all kept dogs; if he had never observed that these dogs were taught to perform tricks, to walk on two feet, to dance, to fetch and carry, to leap at the king's name and at the queen's, to counterfeitdeath, and that this education had rendered them the most miserable animals in the world. From this he concluded that every man was desirous to command another, and that animals being placed below the class of the lowest citizens whom every other class commanded, they pitched upon some animal, in order also to have a living creature

AND HIS MASTER, 2A1 cféaturé to command? In sooth, says James, evety one has his dog. The minister is the king's dog, the wife is the husband's dog, or the husband the wife's dog. Favori is the dog of this man, and Thibaud is the dog of the man of the corner. When my Master makes me speak when I wish to be silent, which in truth, continued James, 'seldom: oc curs; when he silences me when I am desirous to speak, which is no easy matter; when he asks me to relate the history of my amours when I prefer speaking of any thing else; when I begin the story of my amours and he interrupts me, what else am I than his dog? The weak are the dogs of the strong. ; — "MASTER, But this attachment to animals I remark is not exclusively in the lower VOL, UL, R classes,

242 JAMES THE FATALIST classes, for I know ladies of quality, surrounded with a pack of dogs, not to mention cats, parrots, and birds. JAMES. It is a satire upon them, and upon those among whom they live. They love nobody, and nobody loves them, and they throw to the dogs a feeling of which they they know not how to

dispose. . | MARQUIS DES ARCIS. To love animals, or throw one’s heart to the dogs is a singular propensity. MASTER. What is given to such animals would be sufficient to feed two or three unfortunate people. JAMES.

AND HIS MASTER, 943 JAMES, And are you surprised at it ? MASTER. No. The Marquis des Arcis turned to James, smiled at his ideas, then addressing himself to his Master, says: You have got there a servant who is no ordinary person. MASTER. A servant! I am much obliged to you. It is I who am his; and this morning, not very long ago, he had well nigh proved it in form, R 2 Chatting

244 JAMES THE FATALIST Chatting in this manner, they reached the stage where’ they proposed to continue for the night, and took up their quarters in the same apartment. James’s Master and the Marquis des Arcis supped together. James and the young man were served apart. The Master sketched out, in a few words, James's history, and the turn for fatalism, with which his head was possessed. The Marquis spoke of the young man who attended him. He had been a Norbertin. He had left the house to which he belonged,’ in consequence of a strangeadventure. Some friends had recommended him, and he had made him his secretary, till something better occured, . : Says James's Master, That 1s pleasant enough.—And what do you discover

AND HIS MASTER. 945 cover pleasant in that, said the Marquis des Arcis ?}~I speak of James.— Scarcely had we entered the inn we have just left, when James whispered me; See, observe that young man attentively ! I will lay you any wager he has been a monk.—He has hit the matter exactly, said the Marquis ; but I know not how. Do you go to bed early ?—Not usually; and this night I have left orders to be in a hurry, because we have only performed half a day’s journey. If you have nothing to employ you more usefully or more agreeably, says the Marquis des Arcis, I will relate the history of my secretary, which is by no means common.—I will hear you with the utmost pleasure, says the Master. R 3 I hear

246 JAMES THE FATALIST I hear you say to me, reader, And the amours of James! ., Do you believe that Iam not as curious to be acquainted with them as you? Have you forgot that James loved to speak, and, above all, to speak of himself; that general propensity of persons in his situation, that propensity which raises them from meanness, which places them in the tribune, and all at once transforms them into interesting personages? What, in your opinion, is the motive that attraéts the populace to public executions >—Inhumanity.—You are mistaken ; the people are not inhuman. The wretch around whose scaffold they crowd, they would snatch, if they could, from the hands of justice. They go to find in the Place de Gréve a scene which they may recount

AND HIS MASTER. 2A7 recount upon their return to the suburb; this, or something else, is indifferent to them, provided it furnishes them with a part to rehearse, which will assemble their neighbours, and procure an audience. Give, upon the Boulevards, an amusing féte, and you will see that the place of executions will be deserted. The people are fond of spectacles, and they frequent them because they are amused when they enjoy the scene, and because they are still more amused. by the recital, which, at their return, it enables them to make. The people are terrible in their fury; but it is soon over. Their own misery renders them compassionate ; they avert their eyes from the scene of horror they went to behold ; they melt in sympathy, and return in tears! .. rR4 All

948 JAMES THE FATALIST All T have now repeated to you, reader, I owe to James. I confess it, because I do not love to take credit for what another’s mind has produced. James knew neither the meaning of the word vice nor virtue: he maintained that we were fortunately, or unfortunately born. When he heard the words reward and punishment uttered, he would shrug up his shoulders. According to him, reward was encouragement forthe good, punishment a terror to the wicked: What else can it be, he would say, if there is noliberty, and if our destiny be decreed on high ? He believed that a man proceeded as necessarily to glory orto ignominy,

asa bowl which had the consciousness of itself to follow the declivity of a mountain; and that, if the concatenation of causes and eftecis, which compose the life of a man,

AND HIS MASTER. 249 man, from the first instance of his. ex-~ istence till his last breath, were known, we should remain convinced that he had only performed what was necessary to be done. I have often contradidted him, but without profit, and without advantage. In fact, what can you reply to the man who tells you, Whatever may be the sum of the elements of which I am composed, Iam one; but one cause produces one effect. I have always been one cause, and never have had but one effect produced. My existence then.is only a train of necessary effects. It was thus that James reasoned, after his captain's principles, who had stuffed into his head all.the opinions which he himself had drawn from Spinosa, whose book he had by heart. According .

250 JAMES THE FATALIST cording to his system, you may be apt to imagine, that James was never happy nor afflicted at any occurrence ; this, however, was not the case. He conducted himself nearly in the same manner as you and I. He thanked his benefactor for the good he received ; he displayed resentment against the man who committed injustice; and, when it was objected to him, that then he resembled the dog who bites the stone that struck him; by no means he would say, the stone that is bitten by the dog does not. amend; the unjust man 1s corrected by the cudgel. He was frequently inconsistent,like you and me, and apt to forget his principles, except in some circumstances, when he was evidently governed by his philosophy.

AND HIS MASTER. 251 It was upon such occasions he would say, It was necessary that this should happen, for it was decreed on high. He endeavoured to prevent evil; he was prudent with the most perfect contempt of prudence. When the accident took place, he recurred to his old saying, and he was consoled, For the rest of his character, he was good-natured, frank, honest, brave, steady, faithful, extremely absolute, even more talkative, and, like you and me, grieved at having

begun the history of his amours, without almost any hope of bringing it to a conclusion, Thus, reader, [advise you to choose the alternative; and, for want of James's amours, to be satisfed with the adventures of the secretary of the Marquis des Arcis, Besides I see him, the

2352 JAMES THE. FATALIST the poor devil, James, with a large handkerchief tied round his neck, his travelling flask, formerly full of good wine, containing nothing but watergruel, coughing, swearing against the hostess they had left, and against her Champagne, which he never would have done, had he recollected that every thing was decreed on high, even his cold. And then too, reader, always love stories ; one, two, three, four love stories, with which I have presented you; three or four other love stories, which still await you; these are too many love stories. On the other hand, it is true, since we write for you, we must either dispense with your applause, or serve you to your mind; and, of course, you must have determined in favour of the love stories. All your novels, in prose and verse, are love stories ;

AND HIS MASTER. 959 stories ; almost all your poems, elegies, eclogues, idyls, songs, epistles, comedies, tragedies, operas, are all love stories ; almost all your paintings and your sculptures are nothing but love stories. Ever since you existed you have been fed upon love stories, and you are never tired. You have been kept on this diet, and you will be kept on it still longer; all of you, men and women; little and grown up children, without your ever being tired. In truth, this is wondrous. IT would the history of the secretary of the Marquis des Arcis were also a love story : but I fear it will not turn on that-subjet ; and it will weary you. So mucly the worse: for the Marquis des Arecis, for James's Master, for you, reader; and for me. There

254 JAMES THE FATALIST There is a time when almost all young persons of both sexes fall into melancholy ; they are tormented with a restless disquietude, which is constantly busied with various objects, among which it seeks tranquillity in vain. They retire and mope in solitude ; they are touched with the silence of the

cloister; they yield to the seductions of that peaceful form which seems to reign in a convent. They mistake the first efforts of their constitutional system at developement, for the voice of God, dictating the line of conduct that they ought to pursue ; and it is precisely when nature solicits them to follow the path which she points out, that they embrace a line of life direétly contrary to her views. The error is of short continuance ; nature’s dictates become more clear, they recognize

AXD HIS MASTER, 253 cognize her voice, and the sequestered being falls a victim to regret, languor, vapours, madness, or despair... ¥ Such was the preamble of the Marquis des Arcis. Disgusted with the world at the age of seventeen, Richard (that was the name of my secretary). fled from his father’s house, and assumed the habit of a monk. MASTER, Of Prémontré? I give him joy of it. They are as white as swans; and St. Norbert, the founder of the order, omitted only one thing in its constituHOD aes MARQUIS DES ARCIS, To assign a-help-mate to each of : these monks. MASTER

256 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. If it were not the practice for Cupids to go quite naked they would disguise themselves in the habit of Norbertins. A singular policy prevails in the order. They permit vou to hold connection with a Dutchess, a Marchioness, a Countess, a lady of a president, a counsellor or even of a farmer of the revenue, but not with the wife of a citizen; let a merchant’s wife be as handsome as she may, you will seldom see a Norbertin in her shop. MARQUIS DES ARCIS. This is just what Richard has told me, After two years of a noviciate, Richard would have taken the vows if his parents had not opposed the step. His father requested that he would return to his

AND HIS MASTER, 257. his house, and that there he should make trial of his professon, by observing all the rules of the monastic life with stri€tness, and without any exception. The probationaty year having elapsed under the eye of his family, Richard desired to take his vows. His father replied; I have granted you a year in

order to form a decisive resolution; I hope that you will not refuse me one for the same purpose; I consent only to your passing it wherever you please ... Before the expiration of this second period of delay, the Abbé of the order had gained Richard's confidence. In this interval he was involved in one of those adventures which happen only in convents. There was, at that time, at the head of one of the houses of the order, a superior of an extraordinary charaéter; his name was father Hudson. Father Hudson VOL, 1. s had

258 JAMES THE FATALIST had a most interesting figure: a large forehead, an oval countenance, an aquiline nose, large blue eyes, fine broad cheeks, a pretty mouth and beautiful teeth, an arch smile in his face, a head of strong white hair, which added dignity to the interest of his figure; he was possessed of wit, knowledge, gaiety, avery genteel carriage and address, a love of order and of jabour ; but he had most ungovernable passions, most accomplished talents for intrigue, an insatiable desire for pleasure and for women, most dissolute morals, and he had established a most absolute despotism in his house. When the administration of the house was devolved upon him, it was corrupted with Jansenistical ignorance; the studies were ill conducted, the temporal concerns were all in confusioa, religious duties were neglected, . | divine

AND HIS MASTER. 259 divine service was indecently performed, the spare lodgings were occupied by dissolute boarders. Father Hudson converted or sent away the Jansenists, presided himself over the studies, re-established order in temporal matters, restored energy to the rules, expelled the scandalous boarders, introduced into the performance of divine service regularity and decorum,: and rendered his society one of the 'most improving. But this austere regimen, which he imposed upon others he dispensed with himself; the iron yoke to which he kept his inferiors subject, he was not dupe enough to share; they of course entertained a resentment against Father Hudson, which was the more violent and the more dangerous from being concealed. Every one was his enemy and a spy upon his

conduét, every one was eager privately $s 2 to

260 JAMES THE FATALIST to pry inte the secrets of his character ; every one kept a separate statement of his concealed recesses; every one was determined to undo him; he could not take a step which was not traced, his intrigues were scarcely planned before they were known. : The Abbé of the order had a house adjoining the monastery. This house had two doors, one of which opened to the street, the other to the cloisters; Hudson had forced the bolts, the Abbé's apartments had become the scenes of his nocturnal exploits, and the Abbé's bed of his pleasures. When night was well advanced, he introduced, by the street door into the Abbé's apartments, women of all descriptions; there also he gave delicate suppers. Hudson had a confessionary, and he debauched all his penitents

AND HIS MASTER, 261 nitents who were worth the trouble. Among his penitents was a confectioner's wife, a pretty little woman, whose coquetry and charms made a great noise in the quarter in which she lived; Hudson, who could not visit her at her own house, shut her up in his seraglio. This species of rape did not fail to excite suspicion in her relations and husband. They paid him a visit. Hudson received them with an air of surprise. As these good people were preparing to explain td him their chagrin, the clock struck ; it was six in the evening. Hudson enjoins silence, takes off his hat, rises, makes the sign of the cross, and says in a grave and'impressive tone: Angelus Domini nunciavit Marie . .. The father of the confeétioner's wife and her brothers said to the husband as they went down stairs, ashamed of their suspicions: son, you are a fool. . . brother, 58 3 are

202 JAMES THE FATALIST are you not ashamed? A man who says the Angelus, such a godly man! One night in winter, as he was returning to his convent, he was attacked by one of those creatures who solicit the favours of passengers; she appeared to him to be handsome; he followed her; scarcely had he entered with her when he was surprised by the watch. This adventure would have ruined any other

person, but Hudson was a-man dexteTous in expedients, and this accident procured him the good will and the protection of a magistrate of police. When he was conducted into his presence, he made the following address; My name is Hudson, I am the superior of my house. When J entered it every thing was in disorder, there were neither science, discipline, nor morals, spiritual

AND Wis MASTER, £63 tual matters were scandalously neglect. ed, and the temporal affairs of-the house were fast advancing to ruin. I re-established every thing, but I am a man, and I choose rather to pay my addresses toa woman who is already debauched than to a virtuous woman, You may dispose of me, at present, in what way you please... The magistrate recommended to him to be more circumspect in future, promised him to keep this adventure secret, and intimated ‘a wish for his future acquaintance. In the mean while the enemies, by whom he was beset, each individually sent to the general of the order some memoirs, in which the bad conduct of Hudson was exposed. A comparison of these memoirs strengthened the charge. The general was a Jansenist, s 4 and

264 JAMES THE FATALIST and consequently disposed to avenge himself upon Hudson, for the persecution which he had exercised against the adherents of his opinions. He would have been delighted to hear the reproach of corrupt manners against any individual ‘who defended the Bull, or of loose morals against the whole sect. Of course he puts the different memoirs of the facts and actions laid to Hudson’s charge, in the hands of two commissioners whom he dispatches privately with orders to proceed in ascertaining them and in establishing them judicially, and with particular injunctions, to regulate their conduct through the whole of the business with the greatest circumspection, which would be the only way to bring the guilt suddenly home to him, and of withdrawing him from the protection of the court and 2 of

AND HIS MASTER, 265 of Mirepoix, in whose opinion Jansenism was the greatest

of all crimes, and submission to the bull wgenitus, the first of virtues; Richard, my secretary, was one of the commissioners. Conceive these two men out of their noviciate, settled in Hudson’s house, proceeding slyly upon their information. They had collected. a list of crimes which were more than sufficient to have thrown fifty monks in prison for life. They had staid for a considerable time and managed matters so dexterously, that nothing relating to their design had transpired. Hudson, deep as he was, was-on the brink of ruin before he entertained the slightest suspicion. At length, however, the carelessness of the strangers in paying court to him, the secrecy of their journey, their going

266 JAMES THE FATALIST ing out sometimes together, at other times"‘separately; their frequent conferences with the other monks; the sort of people who visited them and whom they went to visit, excited in his mind some uneasiness. He waiched them, he set spies upon their conduct, and soon discovered the object of their mission. He was not the least disconcerted; he set about projecting a scheme not to escape the storm by which he was threatened, but to draw it upon the head of the two commissioners, and the following was the extraordinary plan upon which he resolved, _ He had seduced a young girl whom he kept concealed in a small lodging in the suburbs of Saint-Medard. He hasfened to her house where. he had the following conversation with her: My 3 deat

AND HIS MASTER; 267 dear child, every thing is discovered, we are undone; before eight days have elapsed you will be put in confinement, and I know not what they will do with me. Do not despair; no tears; recover from your embarrassment. Hearken, do what I desire you, do it faithfully and leave the rest tome, To-morrow I set out forthe country; inmy absence go and find out the two monks whose names J am going to mention: (mentioning the names of the two commissioners). Desire to speak with them in private, When you are alone with them prostrate yourself at their feet, implore their assistance, implore their justice, implore their mediation with the general with whom you know they have great influence; weep, sigh, tear your hair,

and while you are weeping, sighing, and tearing your hair, tell them

268 JAMES THE FATALIST them the whole of your story, and relate it in a way the best fitted to inspire em with compassion for you ‘and horror at me.—How, sir! I must tell them Yes, you must tell them who you are, to whom you belong, that I seduced you at the tribunal of confessions carried you off from the arms of your relations, and confined you in the house where you now are. Say, that. after having robbed you of your honour and . precipitated you into crime, I abandoned you to misery, and that. you know not what to do.—But Father ...—Execute what I have already enjoined you, and what I am about to enjoin, or resolve upon your own ruin-and mine. These two monks will not fail to sympathize with you, to assure you. of their assistance and to request of you a second interview, which you will grant them, They

AND HiS MASTER, 269 They will inform themselves respeCting you and your relations, and as you shall have said nothing to them which is not true, you will not be liable to suspicion... After the first and second interview, I will inform you what you shall have to. do at the third:.:: Mind only to ac& = part well. zee Every in. ‘Happened’: as. ' tadsoa had supposed. :. He made a second’ journey. The two commissioners informed the young girl of it, she returned to the house. ‘They requested her to relate her unfortunate history. While she was recounting it to one the other -took notes of it in a. memoranduni: book. They. lamented her. situation, informed her of the desolate state of her relations, which was but too true, and promised her security for her. person and speedy Shen vengeance

2990 JAMES THE FATALIST vengeance upon her seducer, on condition that she would sign a declaration. From this proposition she appeared at first to revolt; they insisted, however, and she consented. The only points to settle were the day, the hour, and the place where this instrument was to be drawn up, which required time and convenience. . . It cannot be done where we are; if the Friar should retarn and

see what Iam about. .-At my house; I cannot propose that to you... The girl and the. commissioners parted, granting each other reciprocally time to remove these difficulties. On the same day Father Hudson was informed of what had passed. He was overpowered with joy, he had arrived at the very moment of his triumph, he will soon teach these immaculates what sort of

AND HIS MASTER. —«- 271 of a tian they have to deal with. Take a pen, says he' to the young girl, and appoint a meeting with them at a place which I shall shew you. They will agree to the meeting I am sure. It' is a decent house; and the woman who occupigs it, enjoys, in her neighbourhood and among the other lodgers, the fairest reputation. This woman was one of those private intriguers, who, under the mask of devotion, insinuate themselves into the most respectable families; who have a pleasant and obliging manner; and who surprise the confidence of mothers and daughters in order~to debauch them. This was the use which Hudson made of this woman'; she was his go-between. Whether or not:he let this intriguer into his secret |. I:know not... th

» 272 JAMES THE FATALIST In fact the general's two envoys agreed to the meeting. Conceive them in the house with the young girl. . The: intriguer zetires. They were beginning to take down her deposition when they heard a great noise in the house.—Gentlemen, what do you want?—We want' Mrs. Simion—(this was the intriguer's name)—You are at her door... They knock with violence atthe door. Gentlemen, says the-girl to the two monks, shall answer ?—Answer.—Shall [open ? —Open.— ... The person who spoke on the outside of the door was a commissionér with whom Hudson was in habits of intimacy, for with whom was he notacquainted ? He had discovered to him thedanger he wasin, and prescribed to him his part. Ah! Ah! said the commissary on entering, two monks #éte-dtéte with a girl! Egad, she's not amiss ! ; —The

AND HIS MASTER. 273 The girl was so indecently dressed that it was impossible

to mistake her situation, and the business which she had to transact with the two monks, the eldest of whom was not thitty. The monks protested their innocence. ‘The commissioner chucked the girl under the chin, who had thrown herself at his feet, begging his pardon. Weare ina decent place, said the monks.—Yes, yes, in a very decent place, replied the commissary.—They were come there on important business.—Aye, aye, we know the important business which: has brought you here well enough!— Speak Miss—Mr. Commissary, I assure you that what these gentlemen have told you is the simple truth . . . In the mean while the commissary began to make out a deposition in his turn, and as it contained nothing but a candid and simple statement of the fact, the VOL, Il. r two

574. JAMES THE FATALIST two monks were obliged to sign it. As they went down they found all the lodgers upon the landings leading to their different apartments, and at the door of the house a great crowd of people, a hackney coach, and some officers of justice who saw them into the coach, amid a confused noise of invedctives and of hootings. They covered their faces with their cloaks, they were in great distress. The perfidious commissary cried, but why, good fathers, frequeat such. places with such a creature as this? In the mean time nothing can be done! I have orders from the police to place you in the hands of your supetior, who is a generous and indulgent man, he will not attach greater importance to your offence than it really possesses. I do not think that they will treat you in your houses as if you were with

‘AND HIS MASTER. © 275 with cruel Capuchins ; if you had to do with Capuchins I would pity you .. . While the commjssary was talking to them the coach drove towards the convent; the crowd increased, surrounded them, preceded and followed them at full.speed. On one side, was heard, What's the matter ?.. On the other, They- are monks.~-What have they done ?—-They were found at the lodgings of- some girls—Norbertins with the girls! — Aye, so they are treading in the steps of Carmelites and Franciscans! . At length they arrived. The commissary alights,

knocks at.the door, knocks again, knocks a third time, and, at last, the door is opened. , ‘They send notice to superior. Hudson, who makes them wait half an hour at least, in order to make the offence as notoc 2 rious

276 JAMES THE FATALIST rious as possible. He at last appearéd. The commissary whispered in his ear ; the commissary affected to intercede for them. Hudson rejeéted his petition ; and, at length, assuming a stern aspect, and a determined tone of voice, he said to him; I have no profligate monks in my house ; these persons are lewd strangers whom I know nothing of ; _ perhaps they are two rascals in disguise, with whom you may do whatever you have a mind... When he had uttered these words, the door was shut; the commissary returned to the carriage, and said to our poor devils, who were rather dead than alive, I have done every thing in my power; I never could have believed that Father Hudson would have been so severe. But why the devil go tn this way to bad girls’ apartments ?—If she with whom you found us is one, it was

AND HIS MASTER, 277 was no licentious errand that took us to her. apartments.—Ah ! ah! my good father, he is an old commissary to whom you are speaking! What are you ?— We are monks, and the dress which we wear is that of our order.—Remember that this business must be cleared up to-morrow ; speak the truth, perhaps I may: be of service to you.—We have told the truth . .. But where are we going ?—To the Petit-Chatelet—To the prison of the Chatelet !—I am distracted at the thought. ‘There; in faét, Richard and his companion' were lodged ; but Hudson’s plan was not to leave them there. He set off in.a_post chaise; he arrived at Versailles ; he spoke to the minister, he reJated the business.to him, as it best suited liis purpose. See, my lord, to . 73 what

978- JAMES. THE FATALIST what-a man is exposed, when he introduces reform into an irregular house, and when he banishes hereticks ‘from it. A moment later, and I should have been disgraced; I should have been undone. Their persecution will

not stop here; all the calumnies with which it is possible to blacken the character of a man of worth, you will hear ; but, my. lord, you will-recolle& that our general... —I"know, I know, and I pity you. The services which you have rendered the church, and your order, ‘shall -not be forgotten. The Lord’s elect are at all tinies exposed to ignominy; they know’ how to bear it; you must imitate. their fortitude. Depend upon the favour ‘and protection of the king. The monks! the monks! I have been one myself, and I know by experience of what they are capable.—If the good of the church or

’ AND HIS MASTER, - 279 or of the state require that you survive. me, I would persevere without fear.— I shall not fail to remove you from, your present situation. Go.—No, my lord, no;: I cannot leave you without: an exptess order to set. these two: wicked monks free: frem their captivity ... 1 see that from your habit, and, for the honour of your religion, you are ready to forgét ‘personal injuries; this is being quite a Christian! and I-am improved by such a man as you, without being surprised. This: affair shall not be madé-more publi¢-—Ah! my lord, you overpower me with joy! That is all of whith Iam new afraid —I will. take care of that. On the same night Hudson obtained orders to enlarge them, and, next morning, at day-break, Richard and his. TA com

280 JAMES THE FATALIST companion were twenty leagues from Paris, under the care of an exempt, who placed them again in their con~ vent. He also carried a letter enjoin-ing the general to desist from similar ’ machinations, and to inflict the monastic punishment upon our two monks. This adventure infused consternation into Hudson’s enemies ; there was not a monk in the house who did not tremble with awe at his look. Some months after, he was provided with a rich abbey. The general conceived a mortal dislike to him. He was old, and he had every reason to fear, that the Abbé Hudson would succeed him. He was warmly attached to Richard. ‘My poor friend, said he to him one day, What will become of you if you fal]

_ AND HIS MASTER. | 361 fall into the power of the abandoned. Hudson ?—~I am afraid of it.—-You are under no engagement ; if you take my advice, you will quit the order... Richard took his counsel, ard returned to his father’s house, which was not at 2 great.distance from.the abbey, possessed by Hudson, Hudson and-Richard frequenting the same houses, it was impossible that they. should not meet ; and, in fact, they did. meet. Richard was one day with the lady of a villa, situated between Chalons and St. Dizier, but much nearer St. Dizier than Chalons, and within gun-shot of Hudson’s abbey. The lady said to him, We have here an old prior, he appears very amiable; but, in reality, what charaCter is he ?—The best. of friends, and the most dangerous of enemies.— Can’t you be tempted to visit him?—_ 2 By

28Z JAMES THE FATALIST By no means : . Scarcely had he made: this. answer, when they: heard the ‘noise. of a phaeten, which entered the court, and from-which Hudson, with one of the most .beautiful ladies inthe district, dismounted.—You.. will see himIn spite of your.inclination,’ says’ thé: lady of the villa to lim ;: for it ishes. : The lady. of the ‘villa! and Richard went to meet the Abbé Hudson and the: lady, who had come with him. in: the phaeton. The ladies saluted. one another ; Hudson recognizing Richard, as he approached him, exclaims, Ah! is it you; my dcar Richard? You intended to ruin me, but I forgive you ; forgive me the visit on which I sent you to the Chatelet,. and think no more of it—You confess, Mr. Abbé,: that vou are a great rogue.—It may be 1 SQ

“CAND HIS MASTERS 283 so.—If justice had been done, it was you, notI,who should have paid the visit to the Chitelet—It may be so. It is owing, I believe, tothe danger which I run at that time, that I owe my new habits of life. Ah! my dear Richard ! what an alteration that made upon me, and how I am’ changed !—But that is a charming ladythat you have with you. —I have no taste for her attraétions— W hata figure !—Iam becomeiridifferent to all this—How plump and healthful she is !--We sooner or later conquer the desire of. rambling amid the wilds of pleasure, which are interspersed with precipices, that we are in danger, at every step, of falling

and breaking out necks.—She has the finest hands in the world.—I have given up admiring hands; a mind well formed, acquires' the spirit of its situatian, which alone is the

£84 JAMES THE FATALIST the way to attain true happiness.—And the bewitching glances which she throws at you, convince me that you, who are a connoisseur, never could have been more affected than by those sweet and brilliant eyes. | What grace, what ease, what dignity in her gait and in her mien !—TI think no more of these vanities; I read the Scriptures and meditate upon the Fathers—Aye, aye, and sometimes upon the perfections of this lady. Does she live far from the monastery? Is her husband young ?. . . Hudson, impatient at these questions, and well convinced that Richard did not take him for a saint, says frankly to him, My dear Richard, you, you... of me, and you are right. My

AND HIS MASTER. 285 My dear reader, pardon me the im“propriety of this expression ; and confess that here, as in an infinite number of stories; such, for example, as in the conversation of Abbé Piron with the Abbé Vatri, it would spoil every thing to fill up the blank. — Where is this conversation between the Abbé Piron and the Abbé Vatri to be found ?—Go and ask the editor of their works, who has not had courage to write it; but who will not scruple to tell it you. Our four personages entered the house where they dined well and gaily, and parted at night under promise to see one another again... But, while the Marquis was talking with James's Mas-~ ter, James was in close conversation with Mr. Secretary Richard, who found him

280 JAMES THE FATALIST, ETC. him to be an original, which would often be the case with men, did not -educaticn first and afterwards intercourse with the world, make them, like pieces of money, which, from having been in circulation, lose their original value. It was late; the clock warned masters and valets that it was the hour of repose, and they obeyed its call. END OF VOL. II.

© O12850.R.10 \ JAMES THE FATALIST AND HIS MASTER. ey VOL. III.

JAMES THE FATALIST. HIS MASTER. TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH OF DIDEROT. IN THREE VOLUMES, VOL, UL aE LONDON: PRINTED FOR G. G. AND J. ROBINSON, PATER-NOSTER-ROW. 1797.

(JAMES. tee FATALIST acer AND HIS ; MASTER J AMES, while undressing his Mas. ter, says, Sir, are you not fond of pictures ? . MASTER, Yes, but in recital ; for, in colours ' of in canvass, though I can judge as decisively as an amateur, I will acknowVOL. Itt. 3B ledge

2_ eee JAMES | ‘THE FATALIST ledge te-you, that I ‘andetstand nothing of the matter ; that I should be greatly embarrassed.to ‘distinguish one school from another; that they might give me a Boucher ‘for a‘‘Rubens or a Raphael; that I might take a bad copy -for a sublime original; that I might appreciate at a.thousand crowns a daubing worth six livres, and, at six livres a-piece worth a thousand crowns ; that I never provided myself, but on the bridge of Notre-Dame, at the house of Tremblin, who, in my time, was the. resource of wretchednéss’ or ‘piodigality, “ and the ruin of the talents of the ne pupils of Vanloo. eopfe ot. uSAMES., eS ee “And how'so ? we Reh. att ain ES hea ee MASTER.

“AND His MASTER,” 3: MASTER Why, what is that to you} ‘Describe me your picture, arid be brief, for I grow er _ JAMES, Place yourself before the Fountain of tlie Innocents, or near. the Gate of St. Dennis; these are two accessories which will enrich the composition. . MASTER. i imagine “myself where. hag tmiention: , | JAMES. . Behold in the middle of the stréet a hackney coach, with the 1 main braces. broken, and overturned upon ‘its side. BD MASTER.

4 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER, I see it. JAMES. A monk and tivo girls have got out of it. The monk makes off as fast as he can tun. The coachman in haste descends from his box; a dog belonging to the coachman pursues the monk, and has seized him by the jacket. The monk exerts every endeavour to rid himself of the dog.

One of the girls, with her bosom and her neck uncovered, is obliged to hold her sides with laughing. The other girl, who had received a bruise upon the forehead, is leaning against the coach door, and presses her head with both hands. Meanwhile the populace assemble, the blackguard boys flock around with loud cries, the shop-keepers and their 3 wives

AND HIS MASTER. 5 wives have come out to the threshold of their doors, and other spectators are at their windows. MASTER. ‘How the devil, James! your composition is well arranged, rich, entertaining, varied, and full of motion. Upon. our return to Paris, take that subject to Fragonard, and you will see what he will be able to make of it, JAMES, After what you confessed to me of your knowledge in painting, I may accept your panegyric -without blushing, MASTER, Twill lay a wager it is one of the adventures of the Abbé Hudson. B 3 JAMES.

6 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES, af sa It is so. While these good people are asleep, reader, I have a little question to propose for your discussion upon’ your pillow. It is, What kind of character would have been the child of the Abbé Hudson and Madame de. la Pommeraye ?—Perhaps an. honest man. Perhaps a consummate. knave. —You will tell me to-morrow morning. _ This-morning then arrived and.-our travellers separated,. for the Marquis des Arcis no longer followed the same road with James. and. his. Master.—We are going then to assume ‘the. continuation’ of James's 2 amours a hope. : 803 but this at least is perlely certain, ‘that the

“-. AND HIS iMASTER,: 7 the Master knew the precise time of day, took a pinch of snuffand said to James, ‘Well, come; James, your amours! | Aas bet . © Sea Tnitieas: seatead of making any answer ‘to-this question, ~said’: Is not the devil in it? From morning till night: people speak ill of life, and yet they cannot come to the resolution of quitting it. Can: it be: because: the present ife, taking every thing i into the aécotint;is no -such’ bad thing, - Or that they: dread: a worse to come? ; a ASST ERs It is owing both to the-one and the other. But a-propos, James, do you belicye

in a future’state? BA. ~ JAMES.

8 _JAMES THE. FATALIST JAMES. y neither believe nor disbelieve. I never think about the matter. I enjoy, as well as I am able, that part of our inheritance which has been. conferred upon us in advance. MASTER. As for me I consider myself as in the Chrysalide, and I love to persuade my_self that the butterfly or my soul. having one day broken it’s shell shall wing its flight to.divine justice. JAMES, Your image is charming! MASTER. It is not my own, I have read it, I believe, in an Italian poet called Danté, - wha

AND HIS MASTER. °9 who: composed a: work, entitled; The Comedy of Hell, Purgatory and Paradise. JAMES, A very singular subjeét, indeed, for a comedy! es MASTER. . Egad, there are in it, fine things especially in his hell, He shuts up the authors of heresies in tombs of fire from which the flames burst forth and spread. ‘devastation far around. He places the ungrateful in niches, where they shed tears which freeze upon their countenances, and the slothful in other niches; of which last, he says, that their blood oozes out of their veins, and is received by the most contemptible of worms. But from whence arose your sally against our

40 JAMES THE FATALIST ‘our contempt .of a life which we are afraid to lose? JAMES. _ From what the secretary of the Marquis des Arcis related to me of ‘the husband of the pretty woman in the phaeton. MASTER. She is a widow. JAMES. She lost her husband ina journey she made to Paris, and the devil of a fellow would not allow the sacrament to be mentioned. It was the lady of the villa, where Richard met the Abbé Hudson, who was entrusted with the charge of reconciling him by means of the biggin. MASTER.

AND HIS MASTER.:' | MASTER. | ee _ What do ‘you mean by your biggin ? | 1 AME Se The biggin is a ‘head dress which js put upon new born infants!" MASTER. 4 understand you. | “And how did dite contrive to perform ‘the operation of . the biggin. JAMES, A circle was formed round the firéside. ‘The physician,

after having féle the pulse of the patient which he found very low, came and seated himself besice the rest- The lady, we mention, “approaclied his bed; and asked hiin several — questions, but withoat s raising her voi 3 hic’

42 JAMES THE FATALIST higher than was necessary to enable the sick man to gather every word of what they wished him to comprehend; after which the conversation was taken up by the lady, the doctor, and some other byestander, in the manner in which I - am about to relate, LADY. That is true, doctor, can you give us any account of Madame de Parma? DOCTOR. T have just left a house where I was assured she was so ill that no hopes were entertained of her recovery. LADY, . That princess has always given proofs of piety: as soon as she felt herself in danger

AND HIS MASTER. i3 danger she asked confession, and desired to recéive the sacrament. ‘DOCTOR. The rector of St. Roch this day carries her a relick to Versailles, but it will arrive too late. ed CAD. Y; Madame the Infanta is not the only person who affords these examples. The Duke of Chevreuse, who was extremely ill, did not wait till the sacrament was proposed, he called for it himself, a circumstance which afforded — great satisfaction to his family. DOCTOR, He is much better. ONE

Ris 14° JAMES THE FATALIST ONE OF THE BYE-STANDERS. It is certain that this does not make 4 man die; quite the contrary. . . LADY. In truth when there is danger in the case, we ought to discharge these duties. The sick do not conceive, it would seem, how painful it is for.those who are about them, and how highly requisite it is for them: to pone the he isang AES “DOCTOR. I lave just paid a visit toa patient, who said tome two days ago, Doétor, what is your opinion of my situation ?— Sir, the fever is violent and the advance is frequent.—But do you believe that any of these symptoms will soon occur? —No, I am only apprehensive for this evening.

‘AND MIS: MASTERY 15: evening.—-This beiig: the’ case I am. _ going fo;send:

notice to.a.particular petson with, iwhont ‘Lhaye; a. little private business’ to transa¢t,.:.that:We. may have:; it settled whiled yet. retain all my facul- ties..... He-confessed and. received all. his sacraments, _ T returmin theevening, no advance'had taken‘ place, . Yesterday he was better, to day he is out of danger. I have very: often seen, in the course of my practice, this effect produced by the. sacrament. | SICK MAN » (To his servant). . Bring me my chicken. cer be SAM BB He ig bfoughts. he ‘wishes to: cut: it, : but has not strengths “The wing is. 2 minced

16 SAMS THE FATALIST miinced for him in little pieces, he calls for bread, raises ‘himself up, makes an | effort to chew a mouthful, which he is unable to swallow, and returns it into his napkin; he asks for some undiluted wine with which he moistens his lips, and says: Iam very well... Yes; but in 4 quarter of an hour he expired. M A STEK. This lady, however, conducted herself very properly .. . And your amours?> JAMES. And the condition which you accepted? | MASTER. I understand’... You are now installed in the castle of Desglands and the old womanwhoexecutes commissions for

AND HIS MASTER, 17 for the family. Jane orders her young daughter, Denise, to visit you four times-a day and to.attend you. But_ before proceeding farther, tell me, had Denise her maidenhead? JAMES (coughing). I believe so. MASTER. And you? JAMES. Many along day had mine scoured the country. MASTER. This was not then, it seems, the first. time you had been in love? JAMES. | ; Why should it? : VOL. III, Cc MASTER.

18° JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. Because we commonly love her to whom we give it, as we are beloved by her from whom we take it. JAMES. Sometimes it so happens, sometimes not. MASTER. And how did you lose it ? JAMES. I did not lose it; I trucked it away, good and fair. MASTER. Tell me a word or two of this truck. JAMES. That were the first chapter of Saint Luke, a long litany of such a one begot : such

AND HIS MASTER, 19 such a one, without end, from the first to Denise the last. nm MASTER. Who thought she got it, yet was mistaken. i. JAMES, And before, Denise, the two women the neighbourhood. of our cottage. MASTER. Who believed they had got.it, and yet were out of their reckoning. JAMES, No. MASTER, Cheat two out of a maidenhead they expected! this was not quite so fair. e @ : JAMES.

20 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES. Hold, my Master, I guess by the corner of your right lip which you draw up, and your left nostril which you curl, that it were as well I did the thing with a good grace as upon your entreaties, the rather as I feel my sore throat getting worse, as the continuation of my amours will be long, and I kave not . courage, but for one or two short stories. te “ MASTER. If James is desirous to afford me a particular pleasure ... JAMES. How should he proceed? MASTER, He would begin with the loss of his maidenhead. Must I tell you? I have : always

AND HIS MASTER, 21 always been.very sharp set for the recital of this great-event. JAMES. | ‘And why, if you please? MAST ER. Because of all those ‘of the same kind, it is the only one which. is ‘peculiarly keen, the others are nothing but insipid and comimon repetitions. Of all the sins of a handsome penitent, the confessor is attentive tothisalone, ‘ JAMES.Master, Master, I see that your head ‘Is cortupted, -and that to your great -affright, the devil might ‘show himself to you under the same form of. parenthésis as he appeared to Fefragus. g c 3 MASTER.

al 22 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. . That may be; but I will lay a wager you were initiated by some old gamester of your village. JAMES, _ Do not wager for you would lose.. “MASTER. . It was by your parson’s maid? JAMES. Do not wager you would still lose. MASTER. It was then by his niece? JAMES. His: niece was overrun with pride and devotion, two qualities which are very well

“AND HIS MASTER. 23 ‘well coupled together, but which do not suit me. MASTER. a Well, now I believe I have hit the mark. . JAMES, I, for my part, believe no such thing. MASTER, One fair or market day... JAMES, Tt was neither a

fair nor a market day. MASTER. You went to the city. JAMES, | Idid not goto thecity. c 4 MASTER.

24 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. And it was decreed on high that 5 you should meet in a tavern with some of those obliging creatures, and that you should get yourself drunk . . JAMES, | I was fasting at the time, and what was decreed on high was this, that at the present hour you should bewilder yourself in false conjectures, and that you should fallinto'an error of which you have corrected: me, the fury of guessing, and always erroneously. Such as you see me, sir, I. have beans once baptized, — MASTER. If you propose to begin thee history of the loss of your maidenhead, from the

- AND HIS MASTER, 25 the period when you issued from the baptismal fount, we shall not get that length so soon. a JAMES I had then a godfather and a godmother, Master Bigre, the most noted cartwright in the village, had' a son. Bigre, the elder, was my godfather, and Bigre, the son, was my friend. At the age of eighteen or nineteen, we both became enamoured of a mantua-maker, called Justina, She had not the charac-. ter of being extremely cruel, but she took it into her head to signalize herself by. a first scoin, and her choice fel] upon me. . MASTER. Aye, that's one of those whimsies of woman-kind, which we cannot comprehend. | | JAMES

26 JAMES THE FATALYST JAMES. The whole habitation of my godfa- ~ ther, Mr. Bigre the cartwright, consisted in a shop and a garret. His bed was at the extremity of the shop. Bigre my friend slept in the garret, to. which one clambered by a little ladder, placed almost at equal distances from his father's bed and the door of the shop. When Bigre my godfather had fairly fallen asleep, Bigre my friend silently opened the door, and Justina mounted the garret by the little ladder. In the morning at day break, before Bigre the father was awake, Bigre the son descended from his garret, opened the door, and Justina made her escape as she had entered.

MASTER,

- AND HIS MASTER. 27 MASTER. To go and visit some other gatret, her own, or another’s, JAMES. Why not?—The intercourse of Bigre and Justina was agreeable enough, but it was to be disturbed, this was decreed on high; and accordingly it happened. . MASTER, By the father ? JAMES, . ‘ No.. a MASTER, By the mother? JAMES. - : : ‘No, she was dead. MASTER.

28 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. By a rival? JAMES. Egad, no, no; by all the devils in hell, no!—My Master, it is decreed on high that you should be possessed with ope all the rest of your life. Aslong as you liye you will guess, I repeat it, and you will always guess wrong ... One morning, my friend Bigre having been more fatigued than ordinary with the Jabour of the evening or with the pleasure of the night, was reposing sweetly inthe arms of Justina, whenatremendouS voice was heard at the foot of the stairs, Bigre! Bigre! Cursed sluggard! The Angelus has rung ; itis “near half past five, and you are still in. your gerre - Do.

AND HIS MASTER. 29 Do you intend to remain there till midday? Must I come up-and bring you down faster than you would chuse? Bigre! Bigre !—Father.—And thataxle~ tree which that old snarling farmer expects, do you wish him to return here about it and begin a racket?—The axle-tree is ready, and he will. have it in less than-a quarter of an hour .°;. I leave-you to judge of the pangs of Justina and my poor friend, Bigre the sonMASTER, I am sure that Justina laid down many resolutions never more to return to the garret, and that she went there the same evening.—But how did she ~ get out in the morning? JAMES. If you set about guessing, I am silent ive . Meanwhile Bigre the son, jumped

30 JAMES THE FATALIST jumped out of bed naked, his breeches in his hand, and his waistcoat over his arm. While he dressed himself, ‘Bigre the father: muttered between his teeth: Since this little mantuamaker has run in his head, every thing goes at sixes and sevens. This must have an end ; it cannot last; it begins to tire me,

Besides, if she were a girl worth the pains, but such a creature! God knows what a creature! Ah, if the poor woman that is no more, who was honour every inch of her, saw this, long since she would have cudgelled the one and’scratched out the eyes of the other at the public church door, under the porch before every body: for nothing would have prevented her ; but if I have been too indulgent hitherto, and they 1 imagine that I will continue, ney are mistaken. MASTER,

AND HIS MASTER. 3 | “MASTER, And all these observations Justina . heard from the garret ? ; JAMES. I have no doubt of it. In the mean. time Bigre the son had gone away to the farmer’s house, with the axle-tree upon his shoulders, and Bigre the fa;ther had fallen to his work. After a few strokes of the planer, his nose itched for a pinch of snuff. He searches for his box in his pocket, under his pillow, and it is not to be found. It is that rogue who has laid his hands on it, as usual; let us see if he has not left it above ... and up he mounts to the garret. A moment after he discovers that he wants ‘his pipe-and his knife, and

32 JAMES THE FATALIST and he again mounts up to the gafret. MASTER. ~ And Justina? JAMES. She had huddled together her clothes in haste, and had slipped under the bed, where she was stretched out flat on her face, more dead than alive. MASTER; And your friend Bigre the son ? JAMES. His axtle-tree taken home, put on and paid for, he came to our house, — and explained to me the terrible dilemma in which he was placed. After diverting myself a lithe with him, Hark

AND. HIS! MASTER. ¢ ~ 33: Hark, -Bigre, says I, go take a turn through the village, wherever you have | a mind, I will extricate you from: this scrape. . I only ask .one thing, that: 1s, to give me :time’. .. You smile, sir ;: what do you mean by that >?" MASTER Nothing. , JAMES. My friend Bigre departs. I dress - myself, for I had not yet got up. I go to his father’s house, who, as soon as he perceived me; gave a cry of surprise and joy, saying; Ah, godson, are you here ? Where have you been? and what makes you up so-early in the morning? ... My godfather Bigre teally

had. a: kindness ,for.: me, so I frankly replied, Where Thave been, is YOu, I, - p> nat

34 JAMES THE FATALIST not the point ; but how I am to get home again—Ah, godson ! thou art growing a rake ; I am much afraid that Bigre and ‘you are both'alike. You have passed the nightabroad.—And my | father will. hear no reason in such a case.—You father is in the right, godson, to take ne excuse for that. But Jet us begin with breakfast; a bottle may suggest something. MASTER, James, this man ia well. JAMES. 1 ansivered him, that 1 neither wart. ed, ‘nor desired to eat or drink; and that I was sinking with- fatigue ‘and sleep. Old Bigre, whe in his-time had -been like: his neighbours, chuckling, alded Godson, she’ swas prétty, and you ~ kept

-AND-HIS MASTER, . 85 kept to it, Hark ye, Bigre is. gone out; go-up to the garret and lay youtself down-in his bed ... But a word before he returns. .He is yoursriend's when -you' are by yourselves tell him, Tam dissatisfied. with him, very dissatisfied.’ It is a little girl, Justina, whom you must know, (for what Jad in the village does not know-her ?) that has debauched him. You will do. mea real. service if you wean him from this creature, Formerly he was. what you call a smart Jad ;. byt since he has formed this unfortunate acquaintance. ... You don’t attend to me; your eyes are shut ;: mount and go and rest yourself. I go up stairs, undress myself, raise -up the coverlet and the sheets, and grope all round, but no Justina to be found! _ Meanwhile, Bigre my godD2 father,

36 JAMES THE FATALIST father was saying to himself, Children ! cursed children! there is not one of them who does not give vexation to his father! ... Justina not being in the bed, I suspected she was under it, The - light of the candle was very obscure. I kneel down, extend my hands, and feel one of her arms, which I seize, and draw her to me. She comes out - from under the bed trembling. ‘I embrace her, cheer-her, and make signs for _ her to goto bed. She folds her hands, ‘throws herself at my feet, and clasps ‘my knees. I might not, perhaps, have been able to resist this

dumb scene, had the light shone upon it; but darkness when it does not render us timid, makes us enterprising. Besides [her: ‘former scorn rankled in my mind. All the answer I made was pushing her to-watds- the ladder, which went down to the

AND HIS MASTER. . = 37. the shop. She uttered a cry of terror.. Bigre, who heard it, says, he is dream-ing ... Justina swooned away; her knees sunk under her. -In her delirium, she said, in a trepidating voice, He: is coming — there —I hear him mount-: ing — J am undone .. —No, no, ‘replied I, in a smothered tone, fear nothing, be quiet, and go to bed. ... She pérsists in: her refusal. .I.remain obstinate. She resigns; and, in.a moment, we were peed by each other’s side.. MASTER, - Traitor! ‘monster! Do - you ‘know what: ctime you are’ goirig to commit ? You are ‘about to violate’ this girl, if not by-force, at least by terror. Prosecu- . ted before the courts of juitice, you D3 - would N

38° JAMES THE FATALIST would have experienced all the rigour reserved for ravishers. : JAMES. tL bie t know whether I violated het or not ; but I know very well I did her no harm, and that.she did me none. At first, turning het mouth away. from my kisses, she approached. my. ear, and said, very low, No, no, James... At this I. prétended:ta be getting out of bed, and advancing to the ladder ; she detained me, and again whispered.me, I never could have believed you ‘so wicked! I see that it 3s in vain to expect ‘any pity from you ; but. at. least promise, swear to me... . --Whiat i-~ That Bigre: shall know pais ot it, WastER,: You promised, you swore, ‘ind all went on well, JAMES,

AND HIS MASTER... 39 SAME 8. . And: again extremely well.!: .~ ee eee - And. still, once apts) exceedingly well ! - a. TAM ES. s ee Precisely s0; you seein to know as well as if you had been there. All this while Bigre my friend, impatient, anxious, and tired of wandering about the house, re-enters his father’s ‘shop; who says to him, peevishly, You have staid a long while about nothing... Bigre answered him, with more peevishnessstill: Was I not obliged to ease . at’ both ends, that

cursed axle-tree, which was too thick ?—I told you so; but you must always, have things your ‘own way.—I did so, because it is easier D4 to

40 JAMES THE PATALIST to lessen than to enlarge.-—Take that spoke, and go finish ‘it at the door.— Why at the: door }—Because the: noise of the tools would awake your friend James.—James | .. . Yes, James ; he is above in. the garret sleeping. Ah! fathers are ever to be pitied for somie thing or other? Heydey! will you bestir yourself? You. will never.-do | “your work ‘standing there, | like, an ‘idiot, drooping your head, gaping, and hanging your hands, .. Bigre my friend, furiously incensed, darts to the ladder, ; Bigre my godfather, pulls him back, saying, Where are you ‘going? ‘Tet ‘that poor devil sleep ; he is exhausted with fatigue. In . his situation, . how ‘would you | like to have your repose dis‘turbed ? ; Po MASTER,

AND. HIG MASTER. 41. MASTER: And Justina heard all this? 4247 JAMES. As well as rn hear me, . MASTER. And what did aie do? TAME & I Haughed. ‘MASTER eS “And Justina? . hoe JAMES. She had torn off her night-cap, pulTed her hair, raised her eyes to heaven, at least I suppose so, and .wrung her hands, MASTER,

Az JAMES THE FATALIST - MASTER. James, you afe a barbatia you have a heart of stone. JAMES, No, sir, no; I have sensibility ; : but I reserve it for.a more suitable occasion. The prodigals of. this. treasure have lavished it so much when they should have prattised economy that they have none left when they ought to be profuse ... I dress myself and come down. Bigre‘ the father, “said to me, You had need of this ; it has quite Tefreshed you. When you came here you looked like a ghost, and now you Jook as ruddy and fresh-as an infant on the breast. ‘Sleep isa good thing! .. Bigte, go down tothe cellar, and fetch a Ne that we may have breakfast, Now,

“AND HIS MASTER, 43 | Now, godson, you will bate very | willingly ! b= Most willingly. . ~ The bottle is brought scat plated upon the bench ; we’ stood round.

Bipre the father fills his glass and mine; Bigre the son says in a surly’ tone; as for me, I am not thirsty so early ‘i in the morning. -—You won't drifk ?— . No.—Ah! I know what is the mat-ter; hold, godson, he has got Justina in his head ; he has been to her housé where she was not to be found, or he must have surprised her with another ; his sulkiness to the bottle is not natural, that I can tell you——But you may have really. guessed rightly, says L— _ Truce with your jokes, James, says Bigre the son ; well or ill timed,

44° «JAMES THE FATALIST prevent, us from taking a glass. Your health, godson. — Yours, godfather, saysI...Bigre my friend, drink with ns; you fret yourself too much.about trifles.—Have I not already told you that I will not drink, says young Bigte.—Deuce take it! if your father has really. stumbled upon the truth, what the devil,-you will see her some other time; you will come to mutual explanations, and you will confess you have been wrong.—Ads'life, let him alone, says old Bigre; is it not fair, that this crea; ture should punish him for the pain he occasions me? Come, there is another glass, and to your business. I suppose I must take you along with me to your father's house ; but; what do you propose I should. tell him ?—Whatever _ you please, said. I; : what" “you have heard him say a hundred times, when he has brought

ann iis Masten, = 48 brought you home - your son. Come along... He — out 5. . follow ; and we arrive at the door of the house. I. allow him to-go in by himself. Curious _ to hear. the conversation between old Bigre and my father, I hid myself.in a corner, bebind a’ partition, where f did not lose a single word, —Old' Bigte ; 3. Come, come, neighbour, you must forgive him for this time.—Forgive him, and for what ?—You affect to be ignerant. —I do not affe&t:; I actually am so.-You are fretted, and with rea‘son—I am not fretted.—You are, I tell you.—If you will- have it so, I am satisfied ; but let me- first know the folly he has committed a—Agreed; a ‘bargain; but it is not ‘his. custom. A party of young lads and gitls meet, they : drink,

46 AMES THE FATALIST drink; laugh, dance ; hours piass quickly, and, in the mean time, the door of the house is shut . .. Bigre, lowefing his voice, added ; They must not overhear us; for, in-good truth, were we a grain wiser at theif age? Do you know who make bad fathers? those who have forgotten the faults of their youth. Tell me; have we ourselves nevef' slept abroad ?—And you, neighbour Bigre, have we never forthed attachments that were disagreeable to our parents ?—Well, and accotdingly I cry more than I really suffer, Do you the same.—But James has not lain abroad this night at least, I am sure— "Why, very well ! ifnot, this night, some other. However, you will not be illnatured to your boy ? — No.— And when I go away, you will not ill treat -him ?—By -no means.—You give me a your

AND. His MasT#u.,- 47 your word: of honour you. will. not ?—~ I give it you.—Your word of honour ? My word of honour.—All is done... .. As: my godfather Bigre was crossing the threshold, my father, tapping him gently on the shoulder, said, Bigre, my friend, there is some mystery in this business ; your son and mine are two cunning blades,.and I fear much, they have to day played us off one of - their tricks; but time will discover. Good-bye, neighbour. | "MASTER, | And what was: the teaule cof the a venture, between your friend Bigre and Justina ? JAMES. Just what it ought to have. been. He stormed ; she stormed more than him. She

48 JAMES THE PATALIST ~She wept ; he was softened ; she swore to him, that I was the best friend he had. "I protested, that she ws the most virtuous girl in the village. He believed us, 'asked pardon, loved-and ¢steemed us afterwards more than' ever. Such i is the Beane: the middle, ied end of the loss of my maidenhead. -Now, sir, I wish:-very much-you would _ explain to me the moral tendency of this impertinent: bays: MASTER. To render 'us better Acquainted with, the character' of women. JAMES. And oye had need of this lesson ! } "MASTER.

AND His MASTER. © "AD MASTER. | And to make us better acquainted with

friends. JAMES. And do you believe, that any one would hold out against your wife of daughter if either proposed tomake a conquest of him ? MASTER, To: make us better aes with fathers and children . JAMES, Ah, sir! they have always been, and ever will be alternately the dupes of each other. | VOL. IIT. B MASTER.

30 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. What you have now said are so many eternal truths upon which it is impossible too much to insist. Whatever be the recital which you have promised me, after this be assured that it will never be devoid of instruction but to a fool. Therefore continue. Reader, I am attacked by a scruple, for having given James and his Master the credit of some reflections which properly belong to you. If this be the case, you may resume the property of them without any ceremony. I thought I perceived the word Bigre displease you. I would fain know why. It-is the ~ real name of the family of my cartwright. Their extracts of baptism and death. testify the fact, and their contracts of marrage

AND HIS MASTER. ‘51 tnarrlage they signed Bigre, The descendants of Bigré, who, to this day, -occupy his shop, are called Bigte. When their childrer, who are beautiful, pass ‘through the streets, people say: See there the little Bigres. When you pronotince. the word bowl,. it reminds jou of the greatest ivory cutter that ever existed. The name of Bigre is néver _ ‘pronounced by the. people in the country where Bigre lived, without recalling to.their minds the greatest cartwright onrecord. . That Bigre, whose name is to be found at the end of all the books of pious offices, since the beginning of this century was one of the relations. If ever.a grand nephew of Bigre were to signalize himself by. some great action, the mere personal name of ‘Bigre would not be less imposing to you than that of Cesar or Condé. It is Ea because

52 JAMES THE FATALIST ‘because there are Bigres and Bigres, like Williams and Williams. If I say plain William, this will be neither William the Conqueror of Great Britain, nor the cloth merchant in the Avocat Patelin. The plain name of

William, will be neither descriptive of a hero Nor acit. The same is the case with Bigre. Plain Bigre is neither Bigre ‘the famous cartwright nor any. one of his insignificant ancestors or ‘insignificant des.cendants. In good truth, can a personal name be considered to be either ina good or bad taste? The streets are. full of curs called Pompey. Lay aside then this false delicacy, or I shall do with you, as Lord Chatham with the members of parliament. He said to them, Sugar, Sugar, Sugar;. what is there rediculous contained in that?... And I will say to you: Bigre, Bigre, Bigre; . why

AND HIS MASTER. 53 why may not a man be called Bigre? As an officer observed to his general, the great Condé, there is a bold Bigte, like Bigre the cartwright, a good Bigre like you and me, and silly Bigres, like vast numbers of others. JAMES. I remember one wedding day, when brother John had married the daughter of one of our neighbours, that. I, being bridegroom’s-man, was placed at. table between two of the greatest wags inthe parish. I had the air of a great simpleton, though I was not such a fool as they imagined.. They put some questions to me about the marriage night. I answered foolishly enough, at which they burst out into loud fits of laughter, while the wives of ‘these two. jesters cried from the other end, what is E 3 the

54: JAMES THE FATALIST the matter? You are all very merry” there!—Something exceedingly diverting, replied one of our husbands to his wife, I will tell you at night.—The other, who was no less curiaus, put the same question to her- husband, and received the same answer. The repast was prolonged and also-my questions and absurdities, the bursts of laughter and: the surprise. of the women. . To the repast succeeded a dance; after the dance, the bedding of the bride’ and bridegroom, the throwing of the stocking ; I went to my bed, and our two wags tc theirs, where anya Tecounted to their wives . . . 2 ee ew we ° s e* e o . e . . ° e e ® * Here, the translator, in compliance with the delicacy of English readers, has suppressed James's recital, being of a nature too offensive for

AND HIS MASTER. 55 ‘JAMES. Every time that I remember a certain. little man crying, swearing, foaming, struggling with head, feet, hands, and whole body, ready to throw himself down from the hay-loft, at the risk of breaking his neck, I cannot refrain from laughing. MASTER. And this little man, who was he ? James made no answer to this question ; and the Master added ; Only tell me who this little man was for them, however it may appear in the freer, looser style of the French—The reader who may be satisfied with the author's apology, page 64, 8c. can refer to the original. . EA JAMES.

56 . JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES One day a child, seated at the foot of the counter of a sempstress, was crying — with all his might. The mistress of the shop, teazed with his cries, said, my dear, why do you cry ?—Because they wish to make me say A—And why won't you say A ?—Because no sooner is A said, than they will make me say B... Thus, nosooner shall I have told you the name of the little man, than J must tell you the rest. MASTER, Possibly enough. JAMES, Nay, it 1s certain. MASTER. Come, my friend James, tell me the name of the little man. You are like to

_AND- HIS MASTER, .. 57 to die with eagerness to be out with it ? Satisfy your own inclination. . JAMES. .3 There was a dwarfish, hunch-backed, crooked, stuttering, one-eyed, Iccherous creature, in love with, and perhaps beloved by amistress Susan. He was the curate of the parish. James was as like the sempstress’s child as any two things in the world, with this difference, that since he had got his sore throat, it was very difficult to make him say A; but, once begun, he went on of himself to the end of the alphabet. JAMES, I was in Susan’s barn along with her ce ane MASTER. And you were not there for nothing, JAMES.

58 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES, No. When the curate arrived, he was ill-humoured, grumbled, asked imperiously of Susan what she wa doing téfe-a-iéte with the most profligate lad in the village, in the most retired place of the cottage ?

MASTER. By what I can see, you had already acquired a reputation. JAMES. And very well deserved it. He was sadly fretted. To this remark, he added others less obliging. I, on my part, lost temper also. From invective to invective we proceeded to blows. I seized a pitch-fork ; I passed it beuveen his legs, a prong on each side, and ~ one

- AND RIS MASTER, . 50) one in the middle, and tost him into the hay-loft, for all the. world like a bottle of hay. MASTER, And was this hay-loft high?) JAMES. Ten feet at least ; and it was impossi ble fot the little man to ‘come down without breaking his neck. a MASTER, _ Well, how then ? | JAMES, After I had removed this pitiful wretch out of the way, I took some liberties with Susan; whilst the priest, unable to contain himself for rage, fell a erying, mu ...mu . murder! . murder! ... Fi.. Lf. va Hite. cue fire... oy ae Ro. s yoliber and,

60 JAMES THE PATALIST and, at this, the husband, whom we thought far enough off, runs in. MASTER T am incensed ; I don’t love priests. JAMES. And you had been enchanted with the very sight of the one to whom J alInde... MASTER. No doubt. JAMES. } adjusted myself and made off; Susan told me what follows. The husband, who saw the eurate perched upon the hayloft, fell alaughing. The curate said to him: La .. la.. laugh heartily ... fo. . fo... fool that you are. ‘Fhe hus| “band

AND: HIS MASTER, 61 band followed his direction, laughed most heartily, and demanded, who had placed. him in that situation ?—Curate. P...p... put me dow...dow... down. The husband continued to laugh, and asked him how he was te. proceed ?—Curate. A...a..asI... IT... moun,.... moun ...: mounted wi....wi...with the fo... fo... fork.—Body of me, but, you are right, says the husband; ah, see what it is to have’ studied!'....— And taking up’ the fork, presents it to the: curate, who fixes himself: upon it, in the same manner as when I tossed him up. The husband wheels him round: the barn: two-ot three -timés} perched. on the end of the: fork, ac: companying this operation with-hum« ming a- popular sohg, and the curate cried,

La.:. la ... lay me dows: dow ...down, ta... ra.., rascal; Wo

62 JAMES THE FATALIST Wwo...Wo... won't youla...la... Jay me dow... dow... down? And the husband said to him, What hinders me, Mr.Curate, from exhibiting you thus through all the streets of the village ? Never, I'am sure, was such 2 fine procession as this ever seen... At length the Curate got off for the terror he had suffered, and the husband set him down. I know not what he said to the hus-+ band, for Susan had made her escape ; but I heard, wre... wre... wretch ! you... you... you will stri..stri.. strike a prie... price... priest. -I... I...I1 will ex...ex..co...Co... . communicate you : you.. you... will-be - da... da..damned. It was the little man who uttered these complaints ; and it was the husband who pursued, belabouring him with the fork. I artived, with many others, and as soon as the |

> AND HIS MASTER, - 3 the husband perceived me, he clenched his fork like a lance, and cried out, Approach, MASTER. And Susan? JAMES. She extricated herself. e ts MASTERS Badly, I suppose ? JAMES, Oh, no; women always extricate themselves well, when they are not caught in open ad... What do you laugh at? my MASTER, At that which will make me laugh, as well as you, every time I remember the

64 JAMES THE FATALIST the little priest at the end of the husband’s fork. JAMES. It was a short-time after this adventure, which reached the ears of my father, who laughed at it also, that I enlisted, as I have already told you. After some moments of silence, in which some say, James coughed, others that he laughed ; his Master said to him ; And the history of your amours ? —James shook his head and made no teply. How can a man of sense, who has any tegard to morality, and who piques himself upon being a philosopher, amuse himself in recounting such obscene stories ?—In the first - place, reader, they are not stories; it is a his3 , tory ;

AND HIS MASTER. — 95 tory. ; and I donot consider myself more _ culpable, perhaps I am less so, when. I. relate the follies of James, than Suctonius, when he

transmitted to us the debaucheries of Tiberius. Yet you read Suetoriius,. without affixing any reproach to his character. Why do not you knit your brows at Catullus, -at Martial, at Horace, cat Juvenal, at Petronius, at la Fontaine, and a great many others? Why do not you say to Serieca; the' stoic, What need is there for representing the drunkenness of your slave in concave mirrors? How ! ate you disposed to shew induigence ta the dead ?.: If you refle& a moment upon this partiality, you will find that it is the source of some vicious principles: If'you are innocent you will not read any book ; if you are corrupted, you will read it without harm, And, VOL. IIL. F if

66 JAMES THE FATALIST if you are not satisfied with what I say; open the preface of John Baptist Rousseau, and there you will find my apology. . >, Whe is there among you that will dare to censure Voltaire, for having composed The Maid of Orleans ? None. Have you then different scales for weighing the actions of men? But you say, Voltaire's Maid of Orleans is a master piece !—So much the worse, for it will be the more generally read.—And your James is only an insipid rhapsody of facts, some real, others imaginary, felated without elegance, and distributed without order—So much the better; my James will be the less read, On either supposition you are wrong. If my work is good, you will be pleased with it; if itis bad, it will dono harm. There

"AND HIS MASTER: 67 'There is no book more ,innocent than a bad book. I-amuse' myself with Writing, under feigned names, "the follies which.-you commit: your follies make me laugh; my narrations make you'angry. Reader, i tell you frankly, I perceive that I am less wicked thai thoii art. I would: be satisfied weie it, as easy 'to secure . . your "charaéte: "against * foul stains, as it 1s to prevent: you: from béing . | tired with my work, or from' being: hurt by it. Hypoctitical os leave nie at rest. 3 i. . 3 Mes ae HS ns a oes a 3 Si ce, et" var You talk boldly of murdering, robbing, betraying, and the other you will: scarce- venture to mutter. The * A few words are here expunged, for reasons assigned i in the note of page 54. F2 °

less

63a JAMES THE FATALIST less. you exhale. from these pretended: impurities by-words, will there not the more’ réihain< in'-your thoughts? And-whatig there-in: the a@-of genetation, ‘$0- ‘natural, so necessary; ‘and! sa proper, that the sign of it should. be excluded. from your conversation ; ; or that. you. should imagine, “that your mouth, your. eyes, and your ears, would be. defiled byi ind [ei is a wise arrangement, that’ the: ‘expressions: which are Teast used. and most seldom introduced into books or. conversation, “should be those which are best known‘ and’ most generally understood. This is the fat ; for instance, the word futzo is as familiar as the word bread: no -age is ignorant of- its meanidy’;. no“ country wants an idioin ‘by which to*éxpress it ; there are a thousand synonifnous terms ‘for it in every.language ; every person under

‘AND HIS MASTER, :: 69 understands it, though it be neither ex-. pressed-by: sound: nor- figure,;:and the sex .which practise: :it the,;most; are. In use of speaking.of it'the least... hear you still calling out, Fie, Cynic |.:fie brazenface ! fié-sophist!..., Avaunt; you insult a.valuable author, whom you have continually in your hands, and of whom I am only a translator. :-The:li; centiousness of--his stylé is almost ia sufficient proof to me of the-purity of his- manners; I mean Montaigne... Lasciva est nobis pagina, vila proba, . James and his Master passed. the rest ef ‘the day. without opening their mouths. James coughed, and his Master said; That is a crucl cough! He . looked at his watcly to see what hour it was, Without informing. himsel lf; jhe opened his snuff-box without thinking, oF Be ee and

YO JAMES THE FATALIST and he took a pinch of snuff without being sensible of it; what convinces me of it, is that he did these things three or four times successively and exactly in the same order. A moment after, James coughed again, and his Master said: What a devilish cough! aye, aye, this - comes with calling, hostess, wine, wine, till you could hold no more; and last night, with the secretary,

you were no better; when you came up stairs you staggered, you did not know what you said, and to day you have halted ten times, and I will wager that there is not a drop of wine in the flask ....He then muttered between his teeth, looked at his watch, and regaled his nostrils. I forgot to tell you,.reader, that James never went out without a flask filled with the best, it was suspended at the pommel of his saddle. Every time his Master

AND HIS ‘MASTER. - 71 Master interrupted his narration by a question of any length, he. untied . his flask, regaled himself with a mouthful; and did not put: it back into its-place till his Master had given over speaking. I also forgot to tell, that.in cases which: required any reflection, his first motion was to consult his flask.: Was he called upon'to resolve a question in morality; to discuss a fact; to prefer one road to another; to begin ; to continue; or to abandon any piece of business ; to balance the adyantages and. the disadvantages of a political, regulation; of.a speculation in commerce or finance; the wisdom or the folly ofalaw; the fate of a war; the choice of an inn, thechoice of ‘an apartment in an inp, or the choice ofa bed in an apartment ; his first word was, Let us consult the flaskk--and the last ; It is the opinion of me and the FA4 flask,

72 JAMES THE FATALIST flask. . When-destiny in;his head was silent it made’ responses by the flask; it wasa kind of poftable: Pythia, which was silent as soon-as it-was empty. At Delphos, the Pythia, with her petticoats tucked up, sat bare upon a tripod and received her inspiration from beJow ; James on hig horse, svith his head turned up: towards | the -heavens, his flask: uncorked,“and - its neck in* his mouth, received his i inspiration from on high. When ‘the:Pythia and James.pronouneed theif’ oracular. resporises, they ‘were both drunk.” He pretended that ‘the spirit -deséeided : upon the apostles in a flask; he called the day of Pentecost the festival’ of “flasks.' He “has left a small treatise ‘ipén ‘Al sorts of: divinations, a ‘profound treatise, in whith ‘ke gives ‘the: preference to divination by Bacbuc or pe! the ey He’ prov ed the curate

_AND) HES MASTER.,. = 73 curate of Meudon to be wrong; notwithstanding ¢ all therespect he entertained for him jin ‘consulting the divine Bacbue by the salutation of the- paunch,- ‘Hoye Rabelais,,sgid:he, but I love truth better than Rabelais. - He calls him the heretical Lngastrimeste, and he proves by an hundred reasons, eych stronger than-another, that the true oracles of Bacbuc or the. flask, were; delivered .only:by. the throat. He reckons up a number of the distinguished votaries of Bacbuc, , of those who have bean really. inspired by the flask, for-the last centuries, Rabelais, la Fare, Chapelle, Chaulieu, la Fontaine, Moliere, Panard,-Galet, Vadé.—Plato and Jean-Jacques ‘Rousseau, who extolled wine without drinking. it, are, in his opinion, two false brothers of the -flask.: ‘he . flask had: formerly:.some celebsated:san@tuaries, ‘the Pomme-deee. Pin,

JA JAMES THE FATALIST Pin, the Temple, and the Guinguette, a sanctuary of which he writes a separate history. He draws a splendid picture of the enthusiasm, the fervour, and the zeal with which the Bacbucians or Perigourdians were, and are still seized in our day, when, at the conclusion of their reports, their elbows leaning upon the table, the divine Bacbuc, or the sacred flask appeared, she was set down in the middle, she hissed, cast the cork, and covered her votaries with her prophetic foam. His manuscript is‘embellished with two portraits, under which is written: Anacreon and Rabelais, the one among the ancients, the other among the moderns, sovereign pontiffs of the flask, And James employed the term Engas-trimeste ... Why not, reader? James's 3 captain

AND HIS MASTER. a5 captain was a Bacbucien, he might know the expression, and Jarries, who was in the habit of collecting every thing he said, might remember it; but the truth isthe word Engastrimeste is my own, and in the original text we read Ventriloguist. All this is very well, you add; but the amoursofJames?—-Theamours of James! there is none but James who knows them, and his confounded sore throat reduces the Master to the necessity of having recourse to his watch and his snuff-box ; he isas much afflicted, by the suspension of the conversation, as you are.—W hat is

to become of us then?— Upon my word I do not know. This would have been a proper occasion for consulting the divine Bacbuc or the sacred flask; but her worship is abani doned,

78 JAMES THE FATALIST doned, her temples are deserted. - As ~ the Pagan oracles, at the. birth of our divine .Saviour,, ceased to utter their responses, .so at the death of Gallet, the oracles of Bacbuc became dumb; no more grand poems, no mere grand pieces of sublime eloquence, no-more productions stamped with inebriation and genius; every thing is laboured, forinal, scholastic and. dull. O divine Bacbuc! O sacred flask! O divinity of James! return among us!... I am seized, reader, with a desire of entertaining you with the divine Bacbuc, the prodigies which.accompanied and followed :her:; the wonders of her reign,and the disasters of her retreat; and if James's sore throat lasts and his Master perseveres in silence, you must be contented with ‘this episode which I shall endeavour to __ prolong

AND HIS MASTER,” = 77 prolong till James is cured; and. resumes the Ory of his amours.:: . - There is aoe a. ttoly deplorable blank in the conversation: of James and his Master. Some day a descendant of Naudot, of the President de Brasse,.of Freinshemius or of Father Brothier, will perhaps: fill it up, and the descendants of James or of his Master, the proprietors of the manuscript, will laugh at them, Kt appears that James, w ho’ W as rendered sitent by ! his sore throat; suspended the history of his amours, and that his Master began the history of his. This is only a conjecture of my own, which I offer for what it i. worth, After a few dotted lines which aiinounce the blank, we read: There ~is* not’-a sa greater

5g JAMES THE FATALIST greater misfortune in this world than td bea fool. . . Was it James who brought forward this apothegm? or. was it his Master? This niight fortti a subject for a long and intricate dissertation. If James had the iisolénce to address this Observation to his Master, the latter was catidid enough, to apply it to himself: However that might be, it is too evident that it was the Master who

contiued: — MASTER. It was the eve of her entertainment; and Thad no money. The Chevalief de St: Ouin, my intimate friend, never was embarrassed by any thing. You have no money, said he to me?—No.— Well! you must get some.—And do you know how I can get it?—Certainly.— He dressed himself, we went out, and he . con

AND: HIS MASTER. 79 conducted me through several streets to asmall obscure house where we ascended by alittle stair-case to the third floor; on which we entered into a spacious apattment, singularly furnished. Among other things there were three chests of drawers in the front, all of a different fashion; behind that which stood in the middle, there was a large mirror, the top of which was too high for the cieling, so that a foot of the mirror was cencealed by these drawers; upon the drawers were exposed goods of every kind; there were two pair of tables; round the apartment were placed some very handsome chairs but not one like anotiier; at the foot of a bed without curtains was a superb duchess; in one of the windows an aviary quite new without birds; at the other window a lustre suspended by a broom stick which was supported at

80 JAMES -THE FATALIST at the ends by the backs of two old chairs with straw bottoms; on the right and on the left were pictures, some fixed to the wall, others piled up. JAMES. This man seems as if he served the country for a league round. MASTER. You have guessed it. ‘The Chevaier and M. le Brun (this was the name of our broker and usurer) flew into one another's arms... Oh! is it you, M. le Chevalier ?—Yes, it is I, my dear le Brun.—But what has become of you for this age, since I saw-you last? The times are very bad, are they not ?— Very bad indeed, my dear le Brun. But that is not the business in hand; hark ve:

AND HIS MASTER, St. ye, I havea word to speak to you . ; I sat down, the Chevalier and le Brun retired into a corner and conversed. I cannot tell. you their conversation, excepting a few detached words which I over heard... Is he good

?—Excellent. —Ofage ?—More than ofage.—And the elder. son? Yes—Do you know that our two last affairs... . . Speak Jower.—The father ?—Rich.—Old ?—And fyaij. ——Le Brun, ina higher tone of voice : hold, M. le Chevalier, I do not wish tg meddle in these matters, they are always attended with troublesome consequences. ~ He is your friend, no doubt, and the gentleman has a reapeealie look; but.. ~My dear le Brun!—TI have no money. But you have acquaintances !—They are all rogues, scurvy knaves. M. le Cheyalier, are you not tired of passing through such hands ?--Necessity has no - VOL. UI. G law.

82 JAMES THE FATALIST law.—The necessity by which you are pressed is a pleasant necessity, an in-trigue, a party of pleasure, some girl . . My dear friend! ...—I am still the same, I am as teak as a child ; and then you ate so insinuating in your manner that I believe there is nobody in the world whom you could -not prevail upon to engage in your service, in spite of oaths to the contrary. Come, fing the bell then, that I may know if Fourgeot be at home .....No, do not ting, Fourgeot will take you to Merval.—Why cannot you do it ?—I do it! I swear this vile Merval would do nothing, either for me or my friends, You must answer for the gentleman, who perhaps, who certainly is, an honest man; I must answer for you to Fourgeot, and Fourgeot must answer for me td: Metval...—In the mean while the maid servant came in, demanding, if he

. AND HIS MASTER. . 83 . he chose to be at-hiome to:M. Fourgeot: «Le Brun,.te the servant : no, there, is no personi-at home; : . Mile Chevalier, I will not, absolutely I will. not. —The Chevalier embraces.‘and . caresses: him: my dear le Bruni; my dear friend! . ; . I drew neat; joining my entreaties to those of the Chevalier; M; le: Brun|!, my dear sir! ,. —Eé Brun, allowed. hime self to-be persuaded: - ‘The servant, ‘who smiled ‘at. this -mummery, retires, and in a twinkling; shows up.-a little Jame fellow dressed in black, swith, a cane «in His hand; he stuttered.‘n his ‘conversation, his counterianee: was lean and shrivelled; his eye piercing: The Chevalier tuins to him and sayss ; Came, Mr. Matthew

Fourgeot;we have ngt a momerit’ to ‘lose, coriduct - us without delay... ... Fourgeot, without.seeming; to pay any-attention; unties a small shammy purse. The Chevalier to Fourgeot ; G 2 by

ron ¥ g6 with you ! God preserve me ! he 84 JAMES THE FATALfST by no means, that belongs tous... I drew near, I pulled out a crown which I- passed to the Chevalier, who gives it ‘to’ the servant, at the same time, chucking her under the chin. In the mean while, le Brun said to Fourgeot : I forbid it, do not:conduct these gentlemen: thither. — Fourgeot: M. le Brun, “wherefore ?.—He is a knave, a ‘patik knave. -diknow very well. that: Mi. Merval - 2 Sbut thete j is mercy fot é évery sins and besides I know no person but hifis;who has money at the-moment.— ‘LeBron! Mr. Fourgeot, do as you please; Gentlemen, I wash my ‘hands of it.—Fourgeot to Je Brun: M. le Brun, wilP aot you come with us ?—~Le Brun ; 4s°an infamous fellow, whom I never ‘Will see again while I live.—Fourgest ; ‘but without you we can 1 do nothing: ore Che:

_AND.HIS MASTER,. . 85 Chevalier ; it is true. Come, my dear Je Brun, it will be doing me a favour, it will be obliging a generous man. who is in difficulty ; you will not refuse 1 me ; you will... Le Brun ; I go to Merval’s! I! I go i “Chevalier, yes, - you. will go for my sake .. .— By the dint of solicitation, Je Brun was prevailed on, and le Brun, the Chemales Matthew: de Fourgeot, and I set ; the Chevalier, by the. way, taking le aa in a friendly ‘manner by the ‘hand, and saying to nie, He is’ the best man in the world, a most obliging’ man, the best acquaintance’: ..—Le Brun; -I beheve that .M. le Chevalier could _imake: me: coin money. . —At. ~ we dative at-Merval's.-- nie eens “fifa GET Bein 0. Oe TE EB JAMES.

86 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES. Matthew dé Fourgeot . . . MASTER. Well; What do you intend to say ? JAMES. “Matthew de Fourgeot . . . | mean 1 to say that M. le Chev alier de SaintOuin knew these people by name and surname, and that there was a kind of scoundrel understanding among all this a es MASTER You may

be right... It is impassible to find a more pleasant, more: civil, more genteel,-more polite, more: “hue. mane, more compassionate, more disinterested manthan Mr. Merval. Myage of 3 majority

AND HIS MASTER. 87 majority and my solvency being prov“ed, Mr. Merval assumed a mingled air of affeCtion and concern, and told us, in a tone of regret, he was extremely vexed that no later than this morning he ,had heen obliged to assist one of his friends who was in a situation of the most urgent necessity, and that he was quite aground. Then addressing himself to me, he added: sir, do not distress yourself because you did not come sooner. I should have been sorry to have refused you,but Imust have doneit, for friendship with me takes precedence of every thing ',. We were all much surprised ; the Chevalier, le Brun, and even Fourgeot, fell down at Merval’s knees, whilst Merval said to them: Gentlemen, you all know nie, I love to oblige, and I endeavour not to spoil the services which | do by performing them in consequence G4 of

58 JASigs THE FATALIST of sdlicitation ; but, upon the honour of a man, théré afe not four louis in the house... As for me, | stood in the midst of these people like a criminal who had heard his sentence. I said to the Chevalier ; Chevalier, let us go, sirice these gentlemen can do nothing . . ‘The Chevalier, pulling me aside, replied, You do not recollect it is the eve of her entertainment. I have given her notice, remember, and she expects a display of gallantry on your part. You know her; it is not that she is selfish; but she is like every body else, she does not relish being disappointed in her expectations, She is now, perhaps, boasting to her father and miother, her aunts and her friends ; and, after. all, to have nothing to shew them would ‘be truly mortifying.

AND HIS MASTER, - “8D ing .. .« Hé then turnéd to Metval, and became miore pressing thai evér. Merval, after they had got hit to draw his purse, says, I am‘ the greatest fool in the world, I cannot see ‘people ‘in difficulty. Well, I think there is an

idea which strike’ me—Chevalier : What. idea ?>---Why not .take some goods ?—Chevalier: Have'you any ?-~ No: but I am acquainted with a woman who will furnish you with some ; an excellent woman, an honest woman. Le Biun ; aye, but she will furnish us with a parcel of rags, for which we must: pay their weight in gold, and which will bring us nothing inreturn._ -Merval :-no,; indeed 5° very fine things, gold--and silver trinkets, silk ‘stuffs.-of all Kinds, pearls, jewels ; there will be very Jittle loss upon such effedts. Shi 2 1S

gO JAMES THE FATALIST is a good creature and contented with.a small profit provided she has sureties; these are goods which bring her a very ‘high price. You may, at least, look at them, the:sightiwill cost you nothing . . -~I represented to Merval and to the Chevalier, that I was riot in the way of merchandizing, and that, though this ‘arrangement was not disagreeable to -me, my situation wauld not permit me -to avail myself of the. advantages to be ‘derived from it. “The obliging le Brun and Matthew Fourgeot said’ both at once; let not this be any. impediment, we will dispo:e of them for you, it -is only the business of half a day ... The business at Mervai’s house was adjourned till the .afternaon, ‘and Merval, tapping me upon the shoulder, said in a soft and ‘penetrating tone: Sir, Iam delighted in having it in my power to oblige you, . but

" AND HIS MASTER. . - D1. but take my’ advice and make. few such loaris, they always end in'ruin, “It will be a. wonder if ever you fall into the hands of such honest persons as Meésrs. le Brun -and “Matthew Fourgeot’. .. Le Brun and Fourgeot Matthew, or Matthew Fourgeot, made a bow, thanked him, and said that he was very good:;. that they had always endeavoured; in the Tittle commerce which they had with — the world, to act agreeably to the. dictates of their conscience, and that upon this account they -had no claim’ to ‘praise-—Merval: I beg your pardon, gentlemen, for who is there now that has any conscience? Ask M. le Cheva-. lier de St. Ouin who must know something of these matters ... We left Merval’s, who asked at the top of the stair case if he might depend upon us, to give notice to his female

acquaintance. We

92 JAMES THE_FATALIST We replied that he. might, and went at four to dine at a neighbouring tavérn: till ‘the hour. of meeting arrived. It was Matthew Fourgeot who: ordered “the dinner, and he ordered a good ‘one. While we are at the desett, two young wenches came. to our table. with their cymbals; ‘le Brun made them sit down. We.made them drink, talk, and play. While my three guests were amusing themselves ‘in tumbling about one of them, her compaion, who was sitting beside me, . said -in-a low tone of voice: Sir, you are in very bad company, there-is not one. of these people whose: name.is not in-the red book #.. - a eae Pies ‘ . a. : tie * The register of police. .

_ IAND-*HIS MASTER, .' 03 “We deft.the tavern at the hour :appointed, arid repaired to Merval’s..°1 forgot to’ tell-.you that this’ dinner emptied both :my purse and the Chevalier’s,. and. that’ by the: way’ Je:Brun told: the Chevalier, :who ‘informed .me, that Matthew Fourgeot demanded: ten louis, for his commission ; “that :it - AS the least: we could give him; that if lie was satisfied with us we should. get the goods at the lowest price, arid that. we might easily mae this sum. upon the males ce eae : svatie eae ee ok Ee Cast Ss Pe We -arvived .at ‘Merval’s, where his merchant had gone before-ns-with her goods. Mademoiselle Bridoie (this was her name) loaded us: with _ Politeniess and honours, and shewed. us -someé stuffs, linnen, lace, tings,’ diamonds, and gold boxes. We. took a part of every

04 | JAMES THE FATALIST every thing. Le Brun, Matthew Four-. peot, and the Ghevalier, put the value upon the different articles, and Merval held the pen. The total amounted to nineteen thousarid, sever hundred, and seventy-five livres, -for which I was goingto give my note, when Mademoiselle Bridoie said to me,. making a courtesy "at the same tiie (for she never adddressed any person without rhaking her honours): Sir; you. propose to, pay your notes when: they become due?—Certainly, I answered.—In this case, replied she, it is matter of indifference to you whether you

give your notes‘or bills of exchange.—At the word bills of ex_ change I grew pale. The Chevalier perceiving if said to Mademoiselle Bridoie; bills of exchange; Mademoiselle! but these bills citculate and there is nO saying into what hands they may fall.

ND Hts MASTER, ja. fall — You are mistaken, M, le Chevalier, said she, amnot so ignorant ‘ofthe bees we owe to ‘personis of yout tank’. ; And then: a courtesy’ PLY keep’ these ‘papers in’ my pocket book ‘atid: néver ptodiice’ them, seo al at’ ‘the time of paymetit, Hold, see: . :’. another’ courtesy‘. eines Then tiking! Hee pocket book: out-of Ker pocket she ‘tead'a number of hanes of persons’ of’ all Hinks and’ tonditions, The Chevalier came up to rife;-and:said Bills of exchange ! this is devilish senous! Resolve upon “what you mean to do, ‘This woman’ appears. 'to me. to be honest § ‘and before the’ petiod. of pay: : ment, you or ‘ will be i in cash. FAMERS “And you: signed bills, of exchange? MAS TE Re ee Ldia. caste? JAMES,

96 JAMES THE FATALIST Big AEN ee to eR JA it E 8. dren set. out. ie the capital, to give them a short. sermon.,.: Do not fre. agrecable to yoor superiors by: a punetual performance of your duty; preserve your religion; avojd dissolute | _ women and sharpers ; but, above all, never sign bills of Seen : MASTER. _ As you may suppose I was not Bottnr than my neighbours,’ the first thing that I forgot was my father's lesson, I was prov ided with goods to sell, but we Were in want of money. © The Chevalier took some pairs of very fine -lace ruffles at prime -cost, ,telling me at the Same time: this is one part of your = property

AND His MasTER.: 67 property disposed of without any loss, Matthew Fourgeot took a watch and two gold boxes, the value of which “he was immediately to bring me. Le Brun deposited the: rest of the effects in his house. I put in my pocket a very handsome robe with trimmings ; this was one of the flowers of the bouguet. which I meant to present to my mistress, Matthew Fourgeot returned, in a twinkling, with

sixty louis, he kept ten for himself and I received the other fifty. He told me that he had neither sold the watch nor the two boxes, but that he had put them in pawn. JAMES. In pawn? MASTER. Yes. -¥OL, III. H JAMES.

08 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES. J know where. MASTER. Where ? JAMES, At Miss Courtesy la Bridoie's. MASTER. Youare right. Along with the trimmings and the robe, I took also a handsome ring, with a patch box inlaid with gold. I had fifty louis in my purse, and the Chevalier and I set out in a style of the highest gaiety. JAMES, This is all very well. There is only one thing which I am puzzled to account

AND HIS MASTER, - 690 count Tor, the disiniteresedness of Master le Brun ; did he get no part of the spoil? MASTER, Come, come, Jaines, you are mistaken, you do not know M. Je Brun. I begged td be grateful to him for his good offices ; he Was angry, and replied that I seemed to take dim forz a Matthew Fourzeot; that he had-nevef been a' beggar. Ah! my dear le Brun, cried the Chevalier, is still the same; but we should be sorry to be out done in generosity . . And saying that, he took from amongst our goods two dozen of handkerchiéfs and. a piece of muslin, which he tendered to his acceptance as a present to his wifé and daughter. Le Brun, after inspecting the handkerchiefs which were very beautiful and the muslin which was exceedingly fine, and considering that H2 they

100 JAMES THE FATALIST they had been offered with so good 2 'grace, as well as the opportunity which he should soon have of recompensing us by the sale of the goods which still remained in his hands, suffered himself to be prevailed upon to accept them; we set out and drove full speed in a hackney coach to the house of the lady with whom I was in love, and for whom. the robe, 'the: trimmings, . and the ring were intended. The present 'succeeded to a - wonder. Every thing was charming; she immediately tried on the robe-.and the trimmings; the ring seemed as if it had been made for her finger. We supped in an elegant style, as you may well

suppose. JAMES, ~ And you slept there ? MASTER,

‘AND HIS MASTER, = 101. ‘ \ - . MASTER, No. _ eRe JAMES, The Chevalier then did ? MASTER. I. believe so. okie Foie JAMES. 7 From the scale of expence on which you set out, your fifty louis. would hot last long. Lhe» MASTE R. ta .No. In-about eight days we rendited to le Brun’s, to see’ what the. rest ae the aa had brought. ee ee JAMES: Title or nothing. Le Brun’ woulda appear to be sorry, affect to -rail against H 3 Merval

102. JAMES. THE FATALIET Merval and Miss Courtesy; call them scurvy, infamous knaves; ‘swear that he never would again have any thing to do _ with them—and, perhaps, gave you seven or eight hundred livres, MASTER. A little. more; eight hundred and seventy. _SAMES. So that if I can calculate a little, the eight hundred and seventy livres that you received from le Brun, the fifty louis that you got from Merval or Fourgeot, the robe with the trimmings, and the ring valued at fifty lquis more, was all which you had in return for nineteen thousand, seven hundred and seventy-five livres worth of goods. The ales this. was fine work! Merval Was

AND HIS MASTER. 103 was right, one cannot every day find such worthy people to‘deal with, — MASTER, You forgot the ruffles, taken by the Chevalier at prime cost. ~ JAMES. ~ Because the Chevalier never spoke to ° you of them. MASTER, I grant it. And the two gold boxes, and the watch put in pawn by Matthew, you have said nothing about, | JAMES. ” Becatse I know not what to say about them, HA MASTER,

WS JAMES. THE FATALIST eee eS In the mean time the period arrived at which the bills of exchange became due. . JAMES, And neither you nor the Chevalier had funds to pay aa ad : MASTER. (7) yu: I was oblige to skulk. My Aicais were informed -of it, one of my uncles came to-Paris. He.presented a memorial to the police. against all the cheats, This memorial was. ‘transmitted to one. of the

commissioners, who happened to be the sworn protector of Merval. He gave for answer, ‘that as the business cathe tinder ‘thé regular’ course “of pe tice the police could do nothing. eee ents nar

- AND HIS MASTER, - 105 person who advanced the money upon. the two boxes, commenced a suit against Matthew. I interfered in.the process, The expences of justice were s0 enormous, that after the sale of the watch and the boxes, there were still wanting from five to six hundred livres to pay the deficiency of costs... "You will not believe this, reader: Nor will you give me credit for the following faét. A maker of lemonade died some time ago in my neighbourhood and left two poor orphans of a tender age. The commissary went: to the. house. of the deceased and put a seal upon his property. The seal was broken, an inventory taken, and a sale held; the sale produced frotn- eight to nine hundred. livrés: Of these nine hundred las atter ‘the expences:of justite were e to deftayed,

106 JAMES THE FATALIST defrayed, there remained four sous for the orphans; thus they received two sous each, and were both conduted to the hospital. MASTER, This was horrible. JAMES, And yet the grievance still continues, MASTER. . In the mean time my father died. I paid the bills of exchange and came forth from my retreat, wliere, for the honour of the Chevalier and my mistress I will confess they kept me very faithful company. JAME &. And you were still as much attached. as ever to the Chevalier and ‘your mistress;

AND HIS MASTER. 107 tress; your mistress holding the sugar plumbs higher from you than ever, MASTER, And what could be their motive, James? _ JAMES. Their motive } ? Why, that you faing ymaster of your person. and -possessor of a handsome fortune, they wished to render you a compleat fool, by making you:a husband, MASTER, ‘Upon my word, I believe: that this was their project, but it did not succeed, JAMES. You are either very fortunate, or they must have been very, inexpert in their managements , MASTER.

108 =s-« SAMES THE FATALIST Faith, I think you are not so hoarse as you was. You seem to speak pretty fluently, 2 JAMES. You may think so, but it is not the case. MASTER. " ‘You cannot then resume the Pistory of your amours? JAMES. No. | MASTER. ’ And your opinion is that I should continue the history of mine ? JAMES. _ My opinion is that we should pause'a little and ‘elevate the flask. : a MASTER.

AND HIS MASTER. 109 MAST ER What! Have you filled your flask, notwithstanding your sore throat ? JAMES. Xs, but by all the devils, i it. is with ew he have no saad IT am a mere Shite. ‘aad. while there is nothing in the flask but water-gruel, I shall continue so. . MASTER. What are you about ? JAMES. Tam pouring out the water-gruel ; for I am afraid it will bring some misfortune upon us, »* 9 MASTER

110 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER, You are certainly mad. Mad or wise, there’s not a drop remaining in the flask. ~ While James was emptying the flask upon the ground, his Master looks at his watch, opens his snuff-box, and prepares for continuing the history of his amours. And I, reader, am tempted to shut his mouth, by shewing him, at a distance, either an old soldier, with 4 remarkable stoop, advancing on horseback at a quick pace, or a young country woman with a small straw hat and red petticoats, making her way on foot or upon an ass. And why might not the old soldier be James's Captain, or his Cap3 tain’s

- AND HIS MASTER.- i}1 fain’s comrade ?—But he is dead.—Do you believe it?.....And pray why might not the young country woman be. Mistress Susan, or the shrewd Hos. . tess of the Stag, or mother Jean, or " even Denise her daughter? A romance writer. would not fail to make it one. or other of them, but Idonot like romances, except it be those of Richardson. Iam writing history ; whether this history be interesting or uninteresting, is the least of my care. My plan was to adhere to truth, and I have executed it. Therefore I shall not make BrotherJ ohn return from

Lisbon':. that fat prior, who comes to us in a phaeton by the side ofa handsome young woman, shall not be the Abbé Hudson.—But the Abbé Hudson is dead ?—Do you believe it? did you assist at his funeral obsequies ?—No. —Did you see him laid in the earth? —No.

112 JAMES THE FATALIST —~No.—He is dead or alive then as you please. I might stop this phaeton, and make the. friar and his companion give rise to a series of events which would disappoint you of hearing both James's amours and those of his Master; but I despise such resources, I see that it only requires a little imagination and some command of language to frame a romance. Let us adhere to truth and till James recovers from his sore throat, let us permit his Master to speak. MASTER. 'One morning the Chevalier appeared to be very low spirited ; it was the day after we hadmade a little excursion in the country; the Chevalier, his mistress, or mine, or both, her father, mother, aunts, cousins, and myself. He asked if I had been guilty. of. any indiscretion which : - had

AND HIS MASTER, 118 had betrayed my passion to her relations. He informed me that her father and mother, alarmed at my assiduities, had questioned their daughter; saying, if I had honourable views, nothing was more simple than to avow them; that they would do themselves the honour of receiving me on these conditions, but if I did not freely explain myself within a fortnight, they entreated me to drop my visits, which were be-. come remarkable, had been subject of observation, and might injure the girl by depriving her. of advantageous offers which might be made her, were it not for the apprehension of a refusal. JAMES. Well, Master, can James smell their tricks, or not ? VOL, Ik I MASTER.

114. JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. The Chevalier added: in fifteen days! the term is very short. You are either in love or you ate not; in fifteen days! what do you propose to do?—I replied, without any hesitation, to the Chevalier, that I would . withdraw.— Withdraw! you are not in love then ?—I am in love; but I have

relations, a name, an estate, and some pretensions; and I never can resolve to bury all these advantages i in the arms of 2 cit's pert little daughter. —And shall Het them know this ?—If you please. But, Chevalier, the sudden and scrupulous delicacy of these people surprises me. They have allowed their daughter to accept my entertainments, and they have left me séte-a-1éte with her twenty times. Besides, she frequents balls, assemblies, and all spectacles of fashionable

'AND HIS MASTER. 115 ble resort; she jaunts in country and in town with the first person who has a good equipage to offer. They sleep soundly, when concerts of outs are given at her lodgings. You frequent the house as much as you please; and, between ourselves, when you are admitted into a 'family they need not be very fastidious in receiving others. Their daughter is notorious. I will not believe, I will not deny all that is said of her; but you will agree that these parents ought to have bethought themselves sooner of becoming jealous of the honour of their daughter. Must I speak out fairly? They have taken me for a downright ninny, whom they flattered themselves with leading by the nose to the' feet of the: parson of the parish. They, however, are mistaken. I think Mademoiselle Agatha charming, She has turned my head, and I believe it . 12 appears

116 JAMES THE FATALIST appears pretty clear, from the enormous expence which she has led me to incur. I do not refuse to continue; but, again I insist that it must be with the certainty of finding her in future a little less severe. I do not propose to waste eternally at her feet my time, fortune, and a fondness which elsewhere I could employ to better advantage. -You will repeat these last words to Mademoiselle . Agatha, and all the preceding part of what I have said to her parents. Our connection must either cease, or I must be admitted upon a new footing, and Mademoiselle Agatha must treat me something better than she has hitherto done. When you introduced me into her family, confess, Chevalier, that you taught me to hope for condescensions "which I have not experienced, Chevaa lier, you have a little imposed upon me. 3 _ —On,

“AND HIS MASTER. 117 —On my faith, says the Chevalier, I am indeed the first who was deceived. Who the devil would have imagined that with the galidy 3 air, the gay and easy temper of this giddy, young girl, she would prove a little dragon of virtue ? JAMES. | How, the devil! Sir, this is very strong. You have been ‘a man of cou~ yage then once in your life ? MASTER: .. Ah,-such days as those sometimes occur, The adventures of the usurers,. my retreat at SaintJohn de. Labran from the search .of. Miss. Bridoie, and more than all, the rigour of Mademoiselle Agatha, . hung upon my mind. I was a little tired with being bamboozled. 13 JAMES,

118 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES, - And after this courageous | discourse addressed to your deag, friend, the Che-. valier St. Ouin, what-did you do? MASTER. I kept my word, and. withdrew 1 Visits. re JAM x Ss. Bravo! bravo! mio caro maestro-t MASTER, s 4 A fortnight passed without my-hearing any thing of them, except by means of the Chevalier, who faithfully appiised me of the effects my absence’ had: . produced in.the family and who encouraged me to remain firm, ° He, would say tome: They begin to be surprised, they

AND HIS MASTER. 119 they look, they speak, and they question each: other upon the subject of disgust which you may have ‘received. The little girl assumes dignity; she says with. an affected indifference, through which it is easy to see that she is piqued: We never see that gentleman now, it seen as if he meant no longer to. pay us a visit; with all my heart, that’s his concern... And then she gives her head a toss, begins -a singing, goes to the window, returns, but with her eyes red; every body perceives that she has been crying.—Crying !—Then she sits down, takes her work, affects to be busy, but can do nothing. We talk, she issilent; we try to divert her, she becomes ill humoured. We propose to play ; to walk ; to go to the theatre ; she accepts the invitation, and when every thing is ready, she prefers something else, with 14 which

120 JAMES THE FATALIST which again the next moment she is displeased .. .

Oh! do not you see that she is troubled! I will tell you no more.—But, Chevalier, you believe then that if I should again make my appearance ....— I believe you would bea fool. You must persist, you must exert courage. If you return, without being recalled, you are ruined. You must teach these low people life —But if they should not-recall me ?-—They will recall you.—Should they greatly protract the period of my recall >You will be recalled very soon. Zounds! A man like you is not easily replaced. If you return of yourself they will frown, they will make you pay dearly for the quar rel; they will impose upon you any law they prescribe ; you will be obliged te-submit ; you will be forced to bend. Do you wish to be master or slave, and to

’ AND. HIS MASTER. 121 to be the worst treated of slaves? Chuse. To deal candidly with you, your conduct has been alittle careless, and it was impossible to infer from it that you were smitten, but what is done cannot be re- ~ called, and we must not fail to improve it if it can at all afford any advantage.—~ She cried!—Aye, well she cried. Itis better however that she should cry than you.—But if they should not recall me? — You will be recalled, I tell you. When I pay them a visit I speak no more of you than if you did not exist. They wind round me, and J allow them to go on; at last they ask if I have seen you, I answer carelessly, sometimes yes, sometimes no; then they talk of something else but they quickly recur to your absence. The first word comes from the father, the mother, the aunt, or from Agatha, and they say: After all the attentions we have

122 JAMES THE: FATALIST have paid him! the interest we took in his last affair! the’ marks of friendship shewn him by my niece! The politeness with which I treated him! So many professions of attachment that we have received from him! After all this can you trust men! ... After this open your door to those who solicit your acquaintance ! . . - Feckon upon friends !—And Agatha? —Consternation prevails in the family, that I assure you.—And Agatha?—-Agatha takes me aside, and says: Chevalier, can you conceive the meaning of your friend’s conduct? You

have so often assured me that I was beloved; you, doubtless, believed, and why should you not have believed it? I seriously believed it, I . And then she stops short, her voice se pailtere: her eyes moisten with tears ....Ha! do not you see that you ~ do the-same! I will tell you no more, I am

AND HIS MASTER, - 123 am determined. I-see what you wish but it cannot be, it absolutely cannot: Since you have committed the folly of withdrawing without rhyme or reason; I do not wish you to.double it by going to throw yourselfat their mercy. We miust improve this incident to advance your affair with Mademoiselle Agatha, and she must see that she does not hold you so fast as to preclude the danger of losing you, unless she employs better means to retain you. After what you have done, to condescend again to kiss her hand! But now lay your hand upon your hearts we ate friends, and you may, without jndiscretion, explain yourself with me; really have you never obtained any thing ?—No—You deny, you affect delicacy.—I might do so, perhaps, had | reason, but-I protest I have not the hap- ~ piness to lie That is inconceivable, for © In

1294 JAMES THE FATALIST in truth you do not want address, What! Have you never found the least moment of weakness?—-No.—It must have come, however, and you have not observed it, and it has passed unimproved. Tam afraid you have been a little simple, it is a fault to which persons virtuous, delicate and tender, like you, are subject.—But you, Chevalier, said I, what do you there ?—Nothing.—You never entertained any pretensions ?— Pardon me, if you please;: they even lasted a pretty long time, but you came, you saw, and conquered. . I perceived that you engrossed every look, that I seldom enjoyed a glance, and I considered the point as decided. We have remained good friends; ‘sometimes Iam the confident of your little thoughts, sometimes my advice is followed, and, for want of better, I have accepted the subal~

- AND AIS MASTER.: 125 subaltern part to which you have reduced 1 me.

JAMES. Sir, there are.two things you must observe. One is that I have never been able to pursue my history without being interrupted by some devil or other, while your's proceeds in a continued progress. Mark: the course of life; one runs through the brambles without being torn, in vain another examines ever step he takes, he finds briers in the smoothest way, and arrives at the end of his journey flayed alive. MASTER | And have you forgot your old theme,' the grand register, and what is decreed on high? =" s JAMES

126 JAMES THE FATALIST "JAMES. The other point is, that I persist in 'the idea that your Chevalier Saint Ouin is a great knave, and that, after having shared your money with the usurers, le Brun, Merval, Matthew de Fourgeot, or Fourgeot de Matthew, and la Bridoie, he wishes to saddle you with his mistress, very honestly and honourably to be sure; that is by the assistance of the notary and the parson, in order to share with you the favours of your wife ..... Oh! oh! my throat!.... MASTER. Do you know that you have now done a thing very common and very impertinent? JAMES, Of such things I am very capable. 43 MASTER.

"AND HIS MASTER. — 127. MASTER. You complain of being interrupted, and you interrupt others. JAMES, 'Tt is the effe&t of the bad sere you have given me. A mother wishes to coquet and desires her daughter to be reserved. A father wishes to be a spendthrift, and his son tobe economical; a master wishes... MASTER. To interrupt his servant, interrupt. him as much as he pleases, and not to be interrupted himself. Reader, are you not afraid of seeing renewed here the scene which happened at.the inn, when one cried: You shall

1238 SAMES THE FATALIST shall go down stairs, and the other, I will not go down stairs. I may, if I please, make you hear the exclamations of: I will interrupt; You shall not interrupt. Certain it is that with a very little provocation to James or his Master the quarrel is fairly begun, and once begun who knows how it will end? But the. truth is that James modestly answered his Master: Sir, I. do not interrupt

you, I only chat with you as you have given me permission, MASTER, Well, I will wave that, but this is not all. JAMES. What other impropriety may I have. committed ? MASTER You go on anticipating the relater, and you deprive him of the pleasure: which

AND HIS MASTER, 129 which he promised himself from your | surprise, and having, by a very unsea~ sonable ostentation of sagacity, guessed what he had to tell you, he has no other resource but to be silent, an alternative which I now embrace. JAMES. Ah! my Master! MASTER. A plague on your men of wit! JAMES. With all my heart; but you will not be so cruel as.... MASTER, . Acknowledge, at least, that you would deserve it. VOL. III, K JAMES,

1380 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES. “YT do; but after all this, you will il pull aut your watch to see what o'clock it is;you will take your pinch of snuff; your spleen will cease, and you will continue your history. MASTER. -This fellow here does whatever he pleases with me . . . Some days after this conversation with the Chevalier, he again made his appearance at’ my lodgings, with an air of triumph. Well, my friend, said he, another time will you trust my prognostications? I have often told you ' that we were strongest; and look here is a letter from the tit; yes, a letter from herself. : This letter was very kind, mingled -with ‘some: reproaches, complaints,

ie AND ‘HIS MASTER. ae 131: plaints, ¢¢ cetera ; and again Iwas reinstalled i in the ule ae you. hae ine. inh ‘dhe. Bae: - what is, the: ¢natter?- Abt-T sus-, pect the cause;you wish to:see this letter. Madame Riccoboni would not have failed to present. you :with ‘it. . And that which Madame de’ ‘la: Pormeraye dice _ tated to the two devotees; I amisure you have ‘regretted.:. Although: it: was. far more difficult than: that of ‘Agatha, and though I do not presume, infinitely upon my talents, I. believe I could have: acquitted: myself, pretty well of the task; but it would not have been original. ‘Tt would have have been like those sublime

harangues of Titus' Livius, in his Roman History; or Cardinal Bentivoglio, in his Wars of Flandets. They are read with pleasure, but they banish the illu: K 2 sion.

132 JAMES THE FATALIST sion. An historian who supplies the characters with speeches which they never uttered, may likewise 'ascribe to them actions which they never performed. Ientreat you therefore to dispense. with these two letters and to resume the book. MASTER. They asked me why I had vanished, L told them whatever occurred first, they weresatisfied with my excuse, and every thing resumed its accustomed course. | JAMES. a 'That is to say you continued your expence, and your love affair never' advanced a step the farther. | MASTER. _ The Chevalier asked me how matters proceeded, and he had the air of being out of temper at their situation. JAMES.

_ AND. HIS MASTER. 133 JAMES, And perhaps he was really out. of temper. MASTER. And why so? JAMES. Why? Because he....,MASTER, Well, finish what you were going to say. JAMES. I will take good care of that; we must allow the narrator .... MASTE R. I am happy to see you profit by my lessons... One day the Chevalier pro«3 posed

134 JAMES THE FATALIST posed an excursion by, ourselves. We went to spend the day in the country. We set out early. We dined at an inn, and staid supper; the wine was excellent, we drank plentifully, talking of government, religion, and 'gallantry. Never had the Chevalier testified for me so much confidénce and friendship. He recounted .all' the adventures of his lite with incredible frankness, concealing neither. the good nor the bad. He drank, he embraced me, he wept with tenderness. I drank, I embraced 'him, I shed tears in-my turn. There . was only a single action in his past conduct with which he could reproach himself, and the remorse of which he would carry with him to his grave.—Come, Chevalier, said I, 'unburthen your mind to a friend, it will. afford you ease. What is the matter? What pec| cadillo

- AND HISMASTER, = = 135 _cadillo is this ‘of which your delicacy exaggerates the importance?—-No, no, exclaimed the Chevalier, leaning. ‘his head upon his’ hands, and Goncealing his face with shame, it is an enormity; an unpardonable enormity: » ‘Could you have believed: it? I,. the Chevalier’ de Saint-Ouin, have once deceived .: deceived, “yes, : deceived. his fiend And ‘how Alas, Ywe both ‘of us fre: quented the same ‘house;’ like you and me. There was in the family a: young lady, like Mademoiselle Agatha; he was in love with her, and I possessed her affections. He ruined himself in expences to gain her, while I enjoyed her favours. I never had the courage to make the confession to him, but if we should again meet I will tell him all. This dreadful secret, which I bear in the recesses of my heart, weighs. me KA down.

136 JAMES THE FATALIST down. It is a burden of which I must absolutely be delivered.—Chevalier, you will a right.—You advise me to do so? -—Assuredly I do.—And how do you _ imagine my friend must receive the confession ?—If he is your friend; if he is just, he will find your excuse in himself; he will be affected by your candour and your repentance, he will throw his arms round’ your neck, he will do-what I, myself, should do in his situation—You believe so?—TI do. —And this is the manner in which you would treat him?—J have no doubt of it ...—At this instant the Chevalier. rose, advanced to me with tears in his eyes, his arms spread, and said: My friend, then embrace me.—W hat, Chevalier, said I, itis you ? It is 1? itis that devil Agatha ?—Yes, my friend, I again liberate you from your word, you have it

AND HIS MASTER, 137 it in your power to treat me as. you please. If you think as I do, that my offence admits of no excuse, refuse me your pardon, rise, quit me, never again behold me but with contempt, and abandon me ta my grief and to my shame. Ah! my friend, did you know all the empire which that little profligate has usurped over my heart! I was. born virtuous; judge then how much I have suffered from the performance of the unworthy part to which I have been degraded. How

often have I turned” my eyes from her to fix them upon you, groaning for her treachery and my own! It is most wonderful that you never perceived it.., All this time [remained as unmoveable as a statue ; but when I had heard the whole speech of the Chevalier, I exclaimed, Ah! base! base Chevalier! you, you myfriend 3

138 JAMES THE FATALIST friend ?—Yes,. I was ‘your friend, and still I am so, since, to -extricate you from the chains of this creature, I dispose of a secret whichis more hers than mine..’ What ‘completes my regret is that you never have obtained any fa-vour which could compensate for what you have done to gain possession of her. (Here: James a to laugh and Chee). : But there is truth in the wine of Collé .... Reader, you do not know what you say. From an anxiety to display your wit, you only shew your imbecility. ‘There.is so little truth in the wine, that, on the contrary, there is falsehood in the wine. I have said a rude thing to you; Iam sorry for it, and I ask your pardon. . MASTER,

AND HIS MASTER.’ 139 MASTER. My resentment’ subsided by degrees. I embraced the Chevalier, he sat down again on his chair, his elbows leaning upon the table, his: hands covering his eyes. He durst not look at me. “JAMES, He was so afflicted, and you had the goodness to console him?. ... (hore James whistled again). e MASTER. .. The condu& which appeared to me “the best, was to turn the affair’ into jest. At every gay observation I made, the Chevalier, ‘ confounded, said to me; There is not another man‘in the world like you. You are perfectly singular. You are infinitely superior to'me.. I | 3 doubt —

140 JAMES THE FATALIST doubt whether I should have possessed the generosity or the force of mind to pardon you such an injury, and you treat it as a subject of pleasantry. This is without example. My friend, what can I ever do to. repair my crime?... Ah! no, no, this can admit of no reparation. Never, never, shal] I forget e1ther my crime or your indulgence, they are two traits deeply engraved upon my heart. I will recall the one to excite a detestation of myself, the other to inspire an

admiration of you, and to redouble the attachment to you with which I am penetrated.—Come, Chevalier, you do not consider the matter rightly, you exaggerate both your own conduct and mine. Let us drink your health, Mine then, Chevalier, since you will not hear of your own... By degtees the Chevalier recovered his , spirits,

AND HIS MASTER. — 1Al spirits. He recounted to me all the details of his treachery, loading himself with the most odious epithets. He tore in-pieces the daughter, the mother, the father, the aunts and the whole family, whom he representedas amiscreant crew, unworthy of me, but very worthy of him; these were his own words:: 2 JAMES. Look you now, this is the very reason why I advise women never to intrigue with men who drink to.excess. I despise this Chevalierof yours, no less for his indiscretion in love than for his perfidy in friendship.' What the devil! He has nothing more to do then. .... to be an honest man and speak to you at first... . But hold, sir, 1 must persist, he is a pitiful rascal, a downright begs garly rascal. I know not how this ad2 venture

142. - JAMES THE FATALIST venture is toend.° I am afraid, least in thus undeceiving you with regard to the past, he is planning some new treachery, Take me, take yourself with all convenient speed out of this inn, and the company of this fellow..... MASTER, fo the Chevalier. . After what you have told me,-I expect you will never see them again. —I see them again! . .. . But what is most affiicting is to renounce them without. taking vengeance. They shall have betrayed, mocked, affronted, plundered aman of honour; they shall have abused. the passion and the weakness of another man of honour, for such I still venture to consider myself, in order to engage him ina scene of horrors; they shall have exposed two friends to the chance of becoming mortal enemies, and perhaps

- AND HIS MASTER,: 148 haps of cutting each 'others throats; for, in truth, my friend, acknowledge that if you had..discovered my. base conduct 5 you are!brave, it

might have excited in your breast such‘a feeling of resentment ... —No, it should not have beeticar-. ied to that extremity. And why should it have gone. so far?—Why?—For a fault which no,person .can answer for himself that he shall, not commit?. Is she my wife?: Though she were? Is she my daughter? No, she is a little strumpet; and do you believe that for a little strum. .... Come, my friend, . let us quit this subject. , Agatha is young, lively, fair, fat, plump, the firmest flesh, has she not? And the softest skin? The possession of her must have been delicious, and I suppose you were too happy in her arms to think much of your friends,—It is certain, that if the charms bee < ° : of

144 JAMES THE PATALIST of the person and the temptation of pleasure could extenuate the fault, no man in the world were less culpable than me.—Ah! there, Chevalier, I draw back, I retract my indulgence, and wish to impose a condition upon the obliyion of your treachery.—Speak, my friend, command, say the word, shall I throw myself headlong out of the window, hang, drown myself, plunge this knife into my bosom? . . And, saying this, the Chevalier seized a knife, which lay upon the table, untied his collar, opened his shirt, and, his eyes glaring wildly, placed the point of the knife at the bottom of theleft collar bone,seeming only to wait my command to dispatch himself in the . manner of antiquity.—That is out of the question, Chevalier, lay down that ugly: knife.—I will not quit it; it is what I deserve, give the signal.—Lay down that

AND HIS MASTER... 145 that ugly. knife, I say, I do not value the expiation at so high a price, I do not... All this time the point of the knife was suspended upon the left collar bone. I seized his hand, I tore from him the knife which I threw away, then, taking his glass and filling a bumper, I said: Let us first take a glass, and then you shall know what terrible condition I annex to your pardon, Agatha then is very liquorish, eh! very voluptuous? —Ah! my friend, do you not know it as well as I do!—-But stop, we must have a bottle of Champagne, and then you shall give an account of one of your nights. Charming traitor, your absolution follows the

conclusion of that account. Come, begin, what! do not you understand me?—-I do understand you.— Does my sentence appear to you too severe !—No.—Youare pensive.—I am.— VOL, III. L What

r46 JAMES THE FATALIST What did I ask of you?—The description of one of my nights with Agatha !—Just so .... Meanwhile the Chevalier, after measuring me with his eye from head to foot, satd to himself: He is of the same size, nearly the same age,and, if there should be a little difference, in the dark, her imagination being prepossessed with the idea that it is me, she will entertain no suspicion .. .. .— But, Chevalier, of what are you thinking? your glass remains full and you do not begin !—I am thinking, my friend ; I have thought of it, it is all decided; embrace me, we shall be revenged, we shal. It is a piece of villainy on my part ; if it is unworthy of me, it is not unworthy to be practised against that little devil. You ask me for the account of one of my nights ?—Yes; is it to demand too much ?—But if instead of the account

AND HIS MASTER, 147 . account I should procure you the night ?—-That were better still.—(James falls a whistling). . Without more ado the Chevalier pulls two’ keys out of his pocket, the one small, the other large, saying, the small one is the key of the street door, the large one is that of the antichamber of Agatha ; there they are ; they are both at your service. Iwill tell you my mode of proceéding for about six months, to which you will accommodate yours. Her windows are in front as you know. I walk about in the » street till I see them lighted, A flower pot, placed on the outside, is the signal. agreed upon ; then I approach the outer door; I open itand enter; I shut itandgo up stairs as softly asI can. I turn by the little passage upon the right, where { find a small wax taper, by the light ef which I undress myself at my ease, L 2 Agatha

148 - JANES THE FATALIST Agatha leaves the door of her room half open, I pass and repair to her bed. Do you comprehend this?—Very well! —As there are people

sleep near us we remain silent.—And then I suppose you have something better to do than to talk.—In case of accident I can leap out of bed and shut myself up in the dressing room, this howeyer was never necessary. Our ordinary prattice is to separate about four o'clock in the morning. When pleasure or repose induces us to prolong the period, we rise together. She goes down stairs, I dress myself, I read, or repose, waiting till the time arrives when I may appear. I go down stairs, and embrace her as though I had Just come in.—And are you expected to night?—-I am expected every night. —And will you resign me your place? —With all my heart. That you will prefer

AND HIS MASTER. 149 prefer the night to the description,.I have no doubt, but what-I should wish, is, that'.. —Go on, there are few things which I do not feel sufficient courage to attempt to oblige you.—And this is that you should remain in her arms till day. Iwill come and surprise you.—Oh, no! Chevalier, that will be too bad.--Toobad? Oh, no, not so bad as you may imagine. In the first place I will undress myself in the wardrobe.—Come, come, Chevalier, the devil is in you. Besides this is impossible. "If you give me the keys they cannot be returned to procure you admittance.—Ah! my friend, how dull . you are!—Not in this case, methinks. —And why cannot we enter both together? You may go to Agatha, whilst J remain in the wardrobe till you make the signal agreed on.—Upon my faith, this is so pleasant, so whimsical, L 3 that

150 JAMES THE FATALIST that Iam almost induced to consent. But, Chevalier, all things well considered, I should like better to reserve this piece of humour for one of the following nights—Ah! I understand. Your plan is to avenge yourself more than once.—Ay, with your consent ? —I agree most willingly. JAMES. Your Chevalier confounds all my conjectures. I imagined... MASTER. You imagined ? JAMES. No, sir, you may continue. MASTER.

AND HIS MASTER. 151 "MASTER, We drank, we uttered a hundred

extravagances, both with regard to the event of the approaching night, the following ones, and that when Agatha should find herself placed between the Chevalier and me. The Chevalier had resumed the most captivating gaiety ; and the subject of our conversation was now no longer melancholy. He prescribed to me precepts for my conduct during the night, which were not all equally easy to follow. But, after a long train of nights well employed, I was always to support the honour of the Chevalier; then followed endless details npon the talents, the perfections, and the excellencies of Agatha. With incredible LA _art

152 JAMES THE FPATALIST art the Chevalier added the intoxication of passion to that of wine. The moment of the enterprise or of vengeance seémed to us to arrive very slowly. We, however, rose from table. The Chevalier paid the reckoning for the first time. We mounted our carriage : we were drunk: our coachman and servants were still more so than we. Reader, may not I'here, if I please, throw the coachman, the horses, the carriage, masters and servants, all together into a quagmire ? If you are afraid of the quagmire, who can hinder me from carrying them safe and sound to town,- where I may entangle their car'tiage with another, which I may fill with a party of drunken young men? Offensive expressions may be employed, a quarrel ensue, swords drawn, and . 2 brawl]

AND HIS MASTER, 153 a braw! managed with all its proper accompaniments? If you dislike brawls, may I not substitute to these young gentlemen, Mademoiselle Agatha and one of her aunts? But nothing of all this really happened. The Chevalier and James's Master arrived at Paris, The latter dressed himself in the Chevalier's clothes. It 1s midnight; they are now under Agatha's windows ;- the light is extinguished; the flower-pot appears. They take another turn along the street, the Chevalier inculcating his Jesson upon his friend. They approach the door, the Chevalier opens it, introduces James's Master, keeps the key of the street door, gives him the key of the passage, again closes the outer door, departs, and after this little detail related very laconically, James's Master continued. , The

154 JAMES THE FATALIST The place was familiar to me. I mount upon tiptoe, I open the door of the passage, I shut it again. I enter the wardrobe, where I find the little wax taper, I undress myself; the door of the room was-half open; I pass on, proceed to the alcove bed where Agatha was awake. I open the curtains, and immediately I feel two naked arms thrown round my neck, and drawing me forwards ; I follow ; I get into bed, am loaded with caresses, which I return. Conceive me then the happiest of mankind. Again I renew my happiness, when... James's Master perceived that James was asleep, or at least pretended to be so. You sleep, said he, you sleep, rascal, at the most interesting moment of my history !... And it was in this very 3 place

AND HIS MASTER. 155 place that James expected to be observed by his Master.—Will you awake ?—I don't think Ishall—Why ?— Because if I awake, my sore throat may 'awake also, and I think it better for both to repose... Saying this, Jamés let his head inaline forwards.—You are going to break your neck.—No doubt, if it is decreed on high. Are you not in the arms of Mademoiselle Agatha ?—Yes.—Don't you find yourself very well ?—Very well.—Remain where you are.—I must remain there; you are pleased to say so.—At least till I am acquainted with the history of Des'gland's plaister. MASTER. You take your revenge, traitor. © JAMES

156 JAMES THE FATALIST -~JAMES, And suppose I did, my Master, after having cut the thread of my amours by a thousand questions, by as many whimsies, without the smallest murmur on my part,.. might. not I intreat you to interrupt yours; to acquaint me with the history of the plaister of good Desglands, to whom I have so many obligations, who rescued me out of the surgeon's house, at the moment when, destitute of money, I no longer knew of any resource to which I could apply, and in whose family I formed acquaintance with Denise ; Denise,without whom I should not have had a word to say in the whole course of our travels? My Master, my dear Master, the history of Desgland's plaister : you

AND HIS MASTER, - 257 you may be as concise as you please 3 meanwhile the drowsiness which possesses me, and by which I am overpower-. ed, will be dissipated, and you may reckon upon my whole attention. MASTER (Shrugging up his shoulders). In the neighbourhood of Desglands, there lived a charming widow who possessed many qualities in common with a celebrated courtesan of the last ages, Virtuous by reason, licentious by constitution ; grieving in the morning for the follies of the precéding night,- she passed her whole life in the alternate progress from pleasure to remorse, and from remorse to pleasure ; while neither the habit of pleasure could extinguish remorse, nor the' feel: . 2 ings z

158 JAMES THE FATALIST ings of remorse extinguish the taste for pleasure. I knew her in her last moments. She would then say, that at last she was about to escape from her two grand enemies. Her husband, indulgent to the only defect with which he could reproach her, pitied her while she lived, and lamented her long after her death. He pretended that it would have been equally ridiculous to prevent his wife from loving as to prevent her from drinikng. He pardoned her the multitude of her conquests, on account of the delicate choice with which her favours were conferred. She never accepted: the homage of a fool or a knave ; her favours were always the reward of talents or of probity. To say of aman,that he had been her lover, was to afhirm, that he was a man of merit. - As she was sensible of her own in4

AND HIS MASTER, 159 inconstancy, she never pledged herself to be faithful. I never in my life, would she say, made but one false oath, and that was the first. Whether it was, that her lovers lost the sentiments they had conceived for her ; whether it.was that she lost the feeling with which she had been inspired, they ever remained her friends. Never was thére a more striking example of the difference between probity and morals. It was impossible for you to say she had morals, yet you would acknowledge that it was impossible to find a more virtuous creature. Her priest rarely saw her at the foot of the altar, but he always found her purse open for

the poor. She would pleasantly say of religion and law, that they were a pair of crutches which it would 9

160 JAMES THE FATALIST would not do to take from those who had weak limbs. The wives who dreadéd her acquaintance for their husbands, -desired it for their children. JAMES (after having muttered between his teeth, I shall be even with you for this cursed portrait). You have been doatingly in love with this same woman ? MASTER, _ I certainly should have become so if Desglands had not got the start of me. Desglands fell in love with her. JAMES. Pray, sir, is the history of his plaister and the history of his amours so closely con

AND HIS MASTER, - i161 connected that they cannot be sepatated ? , MASTER, They may be separated. The plaister is an incident—the history is the recital of every thing that passed while they entertained a mutual passion for cach other. . JAMES, And did there a great many incidents occur ? MASTER, Many, JAMES. ' In that case, if you give éach of them the same space as the portrait of the heroine, we shan’t have done before the day of Pentecost ; and it is.all over with your amours and mine, VOL, III. M MASTER.

162 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. If so, James, why did you carry me out of my course? .. . Have you seen, at the house of Desglands, a little child ? = JAMES. — Mischievous, obstinate, insolent, and sickly? Yes, I have seen it. MASTER. That is the natural child of Desglands and the beautiful widow. JAMES. mec That child will give him abundance of vexation. He is. an anly child, a good reason for his being a worthless:rogue; he knows lie will be rich, and that’s another reason for his being se but a worthless rogue. MASTER.

AND HIS MASTER.,: 163 M.AS8 TER ea aa ~+ And as-he is-siékly; he.is tanght:nothing ; - he is--never: constrained}! never contradicted upon any.occasion 3a third good reason for his ‘being’: nothing but a a eres EAM: B! Se. bn. One night the little wretch baigan crying: most. inhumanly.: The: whole family was in alarm.

They-ran‘ to him. He’ wished his papa to rise.“ Y ou papa is asleep, said they.-No: matter ; he must rise, I desire’ it—He. is sick.— No matter; he mist :risé’: -I-desire-it, I desire it . . I desire it’. . Desglants was awakened, and throwing his night-gown over his shoulders, arrived, saying, Well, my little dear, ‘here I am; what do you want ?—I want them’ all here— M 2 Wha ?

164 JAMES! THE FATALIST Who ?—Every body in the castle.— They were brought ; masters, servants, strangtrs,:domestics,. Jean, Denise, myself-with-my sore. knee, -all except an impotent: housekeeper, to whom a retreat had been: granted in-a cottage near a quarter of a league from the castle. He desired them to go and seek her also.— But, said Desglands, my child, it is midnight.—I- don’t care ‘for that, I wish. it. You, know, she! lives far off.—~ L- wish it,.- Lingig’ ‘on: Sit —That she is old; and cannot .walk.—She shall come. —The:- housekeeper was at last sent for and brought; for she- could as soon have eaten.thejroad as have walked. When we. were.alk assembled;, he wished to ae-2 -and. be dressed, winch was accordingly - -done:s Jand- he made us all-pass through the grand. saloon, where he ‘placed himself: -in--the middle, -in. his me ~ papa’s

AND HIS MASTER.:, 166; papa’s great arm chair. Every thing was complied with. He took,us all by the hand, and wished us all,to. dance. iDhis was likewise. ‘agreed. t to, ‘and: ; we all: set a dancing li like mad folks, But the rest is incredible “1 a ms i 4 “d MASTERS % oie T hope you will excuse me the rest ? JAMES.’ “No, no, sir, you shall. heat he Test. He imagines that‘he is:to give me, with impunity, a portrait of the’ mother, four yards long .... MA g TE Ry I spoil you, ‘James, JAMES, “So'much the worse for'you. M3 —s MASTER,

165 0 sAMES OHY FATALIST “a A ci f Bs . hewn | thel rk and tedious portrait of the tree rigtas that ennui by the long and’ tedious account of the caprices of the child. “JAMES. If you are of that opinion resume the history of the fathet; but no more portraits, my: papa ‘hate: portraits: Tike the very devil. ::: BONS CPM ITY

MASTER. And why do you. hate bak Fe cae het Because they have..so: little resemblance, that if, by chance, we meet with

"2 BND HIS ‘MASTERS. 167 with the originals, .we are unable to recognize them. Relate me facts, render to-me, with fidélity, conversations, and I shall soon know with what kind of man I haveto do: Froma word, a gesture, I have sometimes gathered more than from the babbling of a whole town. ODOM aS PER RS “One day, Desglands . .. JAMES, When youare absent, I sometimes go into your library, I take up a book, and it is usually a book of history . MASTER © . One day, Desglands...v9. >, M4 ‘JAMES.

168 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES, . I read all the are “with my thumb. MASTER. One day, Desglands ,... JAMES. Pardon, my Master, the machine was wound up and it must needs ave run quite out. MASTER, Ts it now run out ? | JAMES, It is, ~ MASTER, One day Desglands invited the beautiful widow, and some gentlemen of the neigh

-: AND-HIS.MASTER,: 169 neighbourhood: to dinner. «The. reign of Desglands was-upon the decline, and among his.puests there:wascone to whom her cinnconstaicy.obegah -to! ‘Jean... At table:Desglands and hisxival sat next to eath other, and” opposite ‘the beautiful widow,->Desglands displayed: al} his wit to,,animate the conversation, : he addressed the widow in the most gallants-train, but:her,mingd,-was. occeypied.with other thoughts, she did not attend to. what he said and-kept Mer eyes: fixed. upon his ival. Desglands hada fresh:egg,in his hand ;.a.convulsive-emotion-of jealousy seizing: him, he clenched -his-fists, and forcing thecontents.of the ege-outof the Shell, he spread it copiously over the face of his neighbour. ;Bhe latter, raised his hand in ‘the attitude to strike. -, Desglands seizes: his fist, ; stops. it, and. whispers. in his ear; sir, I,hold it as recei: | ved...

170 JAMES THE FATALIST ved ...a profound silence ensued, the beautiful widow was seized witha sudden illness. The repast.was. gloomy and short. When they

rose*from table ‘she sent for Desglands and -hissrival into.a separate apartment. Every thing that awoman could do with dk&eéacy’ to reconcile them, she practised j slié entreated, she wept, she swooned, and: in: good earnest too. She pressdd-Desglands’ hands, she turned her eyes, streaming with tears, upon the other. To'the latter she said: And vou love me! ... to the former: And you have loved tiie! ...to both: And you wish to ruin me, to render me the talk, the subject of the hatred and contempt of the whole province | Whichever shall deprive his adversary of life, I will see him no more, he can neither be my friend nor. my lover, I vow against him a hatred that

AND HIS MASTER. f71 that shall end only with my life... Then she again fell into a swoon, and, as she fainted, she said: Cruel, that you are, draw your swords and plunge them into my bosom; if, expiring, I can see you embrace, I shall die without regret! ... Desglands and his rival temained motionless or only administered their assistance, and’ some tears stole from their eyes. They were now obliged to separate. They conducted the beautiful widow back to her house more dead than alive. — JAMES, Heyday, sir, what need had I of the portrait which you gave me of this woman? Should I not now have known every thing you told me? MASTER,

17% JAMES THE PATALIST : MM ASTER. "The. next morning Desglands mal a yisit to his. _charming inconstant where he found his rival. Judge the astonishment of both when they saw, upon Desglands’ right cheek, a: large round black patch?. What is. the meaning of that, said tthe. widow ?—It is nothing, said Desglands. =A pimple, said his rival. —It will go off, said Desglands »... After a moment’s conversation, Desglands took his leave, and, as he went away, he made a signal to his rival, which was perfectly well understood. The latter went down stairs instantly, into the street, he taking the one side, whilst Desglands took the other. They met behind the gardens of the beautiful widow, they foughit, and’ the tival of Desglands remained stretched - upon

‘AND HIS MASTER: 173 ~ upon the spot, severely, though not mor tally wounded. While he was catried home Désglands returned to the house of the widow,he sat down, and again talked of the accident that had happened the preceding evening. She demanded the meaning of that enormous and ridiculous patch. which coyered his, check. He arose, and looking in the mirror, said, in truth, I do,think it a little too large . . Begging the lady’ s scissars, he took off the plaister, pared it all round a breadth or two and replaced it, saying to the widow: what do you think of me now!—Only a breadth or two less ridiculous than before, replied she—Well, that is something, at least ! vs Desglands’ rival recovered. A se cond duel took place, in which Desglands was again victorious, and so five 3 or

174 JAMES THE FATALIST ' or-six times successively, and after every combat, Desglands ‘continued: to: pare. off a. little -piéee:. of bis: patch: and to replace: the remainder.’ upoi - bis cheek.. a ce; ane , JAMES. What was the end of this adventire? When I ‘was catried to the‘ castle of Desglands, I think that he no ee . wore pane large black plaister. MASTER. | No. “The end of this adventuré ‘was _ that of the beautiful widow. The long anxiety which it occasioned her completed the ruin of her weak and precacarious state of health. | JAMES. And Desglands ? ; i MASTER.

AND-HISMASTER.:.., 175 ~ MASTER. One. day as. Wwe,,were taking a. walk together, he, received a: letter, 9 which che opened and said. He, was a brave man, but I cannat be afflicted at hisdeath aes At that instant he tore “from his cheek the black plaister which. frequent parings had now reduced to the size of an — ordinary ‘patch. Such ‘is thé” ‘story’ of Desglands.—Is James now satisfied, and may I oo that, he wall uaten, to thé history’ Of his’ dwn? * Bi Ee JAMES. - Neither the one-nor the other. io? Mestad Sete ies MAST 7) ee .: And what is the reason? : 2 JAMES,

176s sames THE FAALIST “JAMES. — Because it is hot and Iam weary; this place

is delightful, we may- enjoy the shade of these trees, and we may repose on the cool bank of this stfeam. MASTER. “Tconsent, but yoar sore throat. ee SAMES, Proceeds from heat,: and physicians say that contraries are. -eured by-con- | traries. MASTER. That holds true in morals ds well as physics. I have remarked one circumstance singular enough which is that there are few maxims in morals, of which they do not make an aphorism in

‘AND HIS MASTER. = 177 in medicine, and reciptocally, few medical aphorisms, of -which they, of not make a maxim in morals. a JA M E Si ~ And very Properly too. They disabine, aed stretch coe selves upon the grass, James said to his Master: Sir, will you watch or sleep? If yeu watch Iwill sleep, if you sleep I will watch,—-Sleep, sleep, said his Master.—I may then reckon upon your watching? Else, this time, perhaps, we may lose two horses, The Master pulled out his watch and his snuff box. James composed himself to sleep ; but at almost every-instant he awoke in surprise flapping his hands, VOL, ON. | his

178 JAMES THE FATALIST his Master exclaiming ; what the. la is the matter ‘with you? 7 JAMES. I am infested with the gnats and flies ; I would give a good deal to know the use of these troublesome insects, MASTER. ° ' And because you do not know, you think they are good for nothing? Nature has made nothing that is uséless « or. superfluous. JAMES. _ [believe so ; for since a thing is is, it must needs be. “MASTE Rm When you are too full of blood, or when it is bad, what do you. do? You apply

AND HIS MASTER, 179 apply to a surgeon, who takes from you two or three. cups full.:. Well, these very gnats, of which you complain; ‘are a host of little winged surgeons that come with their little lancets to. sting you and to draw your blood drop by drop. ae : JAME Se ied OE Yes, but quite at;random, without knowing whether I have. too,;much or too little. Bring here a person in a consumption, and you'will see whether those little winged-sufgeons! will ‘not sting him. They. mind themselves,

_and every. thing in nature regards itself, and nothing’ but itself. If they" injure others, they care not, provided they derive advantage’ from’ it themselves. sen Thep he flapped his’ hands again in aie air, and said: the Dev il take these little winged surgeons! N 2 MASTER,

180 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER ' Do ae know the fable of Garo*? : JAMES. Yes — MASTER. And what is your opinion of it ? '- JAMES. I think it tad. MASTER. | ‘That is easily. said. ‘ “JAMES And easily proved. If instead of acdms t the oak had produced pumpkins, would this ass, Garo, have fallen asleep ander. an pak? And if he had not fallen * * See the Fables of la Fontaine, asleep

. AND, HIS-MASTER:. 184; asleep under an oak, what would it have mattered, to the safety of his nose, whether it had rained pumpkins or acorns? Such reading is fit my for children. MASTER. ‘ A philosopher of your name, s thinks differently. tie t AMES. Every | one has his own ‘opinion, and John James is not James. MASTER. And so much the worse for James. JAMES. er Who knows that, before we reach.the last word of the last line of the page we occupy in the grand register ?.... N 3 MASTER.

182 JAMES THE:FATALIST MASTER. Of what are you thinking ? JAMES, I am thinking, that while you spoke and I answered, you spoke to me without any previous determination of the will, and that I answered you without any previous determination of my will. MASTER, What then ?. JAMES..What then? We are two mere machines that live and think. 22 MASTER. But, at present, what does your. will point to? a JAMES.

AND HIS MASTER. . 183 JAMES. Upon my faith it is.just as I said -before. In the two machines there i 1s only an additional spring in play. MASTER. And what may this spring be! a: "JAMES, The devil take me if I know how it can play without a cause, My captain would say: Let’ a ‘cause be: given and an effect is produced from a feeble cause follows a feeble effect; from a momentary cause arises :a momentary

effect ; from an intermittent cause an intermittent effe&; from a thwarted cause a diminished effet; and from.-a .cause that ceases to operate, no effect at all. NA MASTER,

184 JAMES THE PATALIST MASTER. "But it appears to’ me ‘that I feel within ‘myself, that 1 am: — as I a that ~ T think. JAMES. My captain: would say: Yes, at present, when you will nothing; but can you will so as to throw yourself headlong from your horse?. _ as MASTER... | Very well, then I will throw myself es JAM ES, Chearfully, and without repugnance? without effort, as when you have amind to dismount at the déor ef ar inn? MASTER.

Y AND AYs MASTER. 185 MASTER, - Not quite so;.. but of what consequence.is that, provided I throw myself headlong and prove that I am free? JAMES. My captain wotild say: What! do not you see that without my contradiction it never would have come into your head to break your neck? Itis I then who take you’ ‘by the “foot and throw you from your saddle. ‘Tf your fall prove any thing, it is not that you are free, but that you are mad. My captain would say farther, that the enjoyment of a liberty which could be exercised without a motive, would be the true character of a maniac. \ MASTERY

186 JAMES -THE -FATALIST MASTER: - That is too much for. me; but in spite of your captaia and: you, .1 will'believe: that I will whef Iewill..: 00020 50 >. JAME S. But if you.are, and always have been, the master of. your ¢ own, W ill; 5 wy do not. man, and why did you. ae cease to love Agatha as oftemas your pride proinpted, you? My Master, we pass three-fourths, of our lives in willing what we. never, perform. a | MAS TER, ‘ That is is true.Be oe a ea And in doing what we never will. | MASTER.

AND HIS MASTER, « 187° : i pee as MASTE.R, And will you demonstrate this to mie? JAMES, If you consent to hear, MASTER, | | I consent, a SAME S,. 5 ey That shall be done ; but let us speak of something else .... ~- After this idle stuff, and

other: conyersation of the same importance, they were silent, and James lifted- up _ his enormous hat, which served as an umbrella against the rain and a parasol in warm weather, a kerchief in‘all seasons, and the gloomy sanctuary in which one p of

188 JAMES-THE FATALIST of the best heads that ever existed was wont to consult destiny upon great occasions. When the borders of this hat were cocked up, his visageseemed placed nearly in the middle of :his body, when they were slouched scarcely: could he see ten paces before him, a circumstance that had given him the habit of poking ' his nose up in the air, and then you might say of his hat: Os illi sublime dedit celumque tueri jussit, et eredtos ad sidera tollere.vultus. . James then cocking up the borders of his enormous hat, and casting his eyes around, perceived a labourer, who in vain whipped one of the horses that was yoked to his plough. This horse, young and strong, had lain down in the ridge, and the labourer; to no purpose, shook him by the bridle, coaxed, caressed, threatened,

CAND HIS MASTER. ‘180 threatened, swore and beat; the animal remained immoveable, and - obstiuae netted to Tises a Tee danas after + musing awhile upon ‘this scene, observed to, his Master, whose attention it had also attracted : Do you see, sit, what is going on there ? “MA STE Re And what else would you have. te be going ‘on More than’ 7 see? “JAMES. Do you guess nothing ? MASTER. No. And pray, what. do you guess, eh? $ “ SAMES.

190 JAMES THE FATALIST JAMES I guess that this foolish, proud, i gish animal is an inhabitant of the town, who becomé haughty in conse‘quence of his first situation as a riding -horse, despises the plough ;. and, to say all in- one word, that it is your horse, the symbol of your humble servant James, and so many other lazy rogues like him, who have left the country, to come and wear livery in town, _ -and who would rather beg bread iri the streets, or die of hunger, than return to agriculture, the most useful and the most honourable of all employments. The Master fell a laughing; and James,. addressing himself to the. ladourer, whe was not

within hearing, said; Poor devil! goad him, goad him

‘aN His MASTER. 9 hiti as-much as ‘you please ; ; his habits are ‘now ‘formied! ‘and - ‘yout oGwilE! wear out! ‘more thani6tie. whip: before you'can inspite that rascal with a little real dig? nity and: somne taste for: ‘labour .” .. . The Master continued. to. laugh. - James} half in ahger, -half‘in’ ‘pity, ‘arose and advanced to the: ldbourér &+ scatéely had: he taken two hundred steps, when, réturning- back to‘his Master,. he ctied out, Sir, make haste, ‘make’ haste, it ‘is yourchotse, wy ied nf coed apie COE ee ais We 4 Nae GO aa Sa At was.so ini fact. No sooner- had the: animal recognized James and his Mastet :than he’ got up ‘arid shook. hisrmane, :neighed, teared and: kindly applied .. his: -muzzle cto i that; of his comrade: Mean while James, indignant, muttered: between his teeth, Oh. you ons ‘good for nothing sluggard, what) hinders

192 JAMES THE FATALIST hinders me from banging you soundly with my boots-? ... His Master, on the contrary, kissed him, stroaked. his hand along his ‘side, clapped him on the crupper_ with the other, and,: _almost weeping with joying, exclaimed, My horse, my poor -horse:! .I -havg: then at last recovered. ve I. Cakgac The ares understood nothing of all this. I see; gentlemen, said he, that this horse has belonged to you; . ‘but he came into my possession not the less ‘honestly: on: that account ; I . bought him at the last fair.. If you will take him back for two-thirds. of. what he cost me,’ you-will do:.me:a .particular service ; for I can make:nothing of him. Whenever we take ‘him out of the stable we have the devil and all to do,and when he is to be yoked, itis worse. When he comes

Aid iid dhe 1G comes to the field, -he lies down ; and he would rather - be beaten. to death that | givé a single pull, or Sulfer a sack oa his bacle, ‘Genfletnen, will you ‘be $0 chafitablé & as to rid me “of this cursed amma? Hej is handsome, but he is sodd'Yor nothing but to ‘prance under a gentleman, and that does not suit me ..- An exchange. was proposed between this and either of the other two that would best

answer his purpose; he consented, the bargain was made and settled, and our two trayellers slowly refitted to the plate where they had. were from* whence they saw with satisfaction the horse the labourer had taken accommodate himself without, rehittaler to his new situation, ue aden: ie: ot) VAetb Se ene, pp ae at give spigiaecy ob well ies now, sir? ¥OL. Ill. 8 MASTER:

194 JAMES THE FATALIST ‘tase e n° Verge well, ‘indeed ; nothing i 13 more certain than that you are inspired ; whether it is by. God, or by the devil, I do not know. Ahi t James, my. dear friend, , F fear miuch you 4 dre Possessed by the devil, - { : SAMS SS Le. Andi thie devil? aie as : Sinn, RS ee e.5 9 A S-7R , ebuaets Heats ie < Because © you perforin prodigies Fs ie your doctrine i is'vety suspicious, Peon se eds COV EPAITs Df . ‘ Pe ome og Secct aS fd set optedied: mutSa.-ue 4 rN oe a - a= er Sed mp | VRREEs. Sb. s0MTaatd 2 iw Daddies itudho And ‘what -conneétion is ,there be-: tween the dotrine a man ‘professes and the prodigies which, he performs ? MASE. ti oe Bes, WRi2gak ‘ ith 2G" ete siOn

AND His MASTER, $95 avers? < I see you have never read Doin da Taste * siete at, Gitte ‘SA M - é And this Dom la: Taste, whom I never have read, what says he ? MASTER. He: says, ‘that God’ ‘anit the ‘devil equally’ ial mitacles: is 2M EB S.° “And how: are’ you: to alniagiah the miracles of God from ‘the miracles of the-devil:? : tae aely MASTER By the doftrine: “If the doctrine be good, the miracles are'from God; if it * A famous Benedictin Monk of the present cantury who, in his’ Theological Letters, supported the dpétrine: that devils,eould perform good: mitacles and operate wonderful cures as well as the divinity. : : e2, 1$

196 JAMES TRE PATALIST is bad, the miracles proceed from the devil. (Here James fell a whistling.} JAMES. And who is to tel! me, poor ignorant wretch that I am, whether the doctrine of the worker of the miracles be good or bad? Come, let us mount our cattle. Of what comsequence is it to you whether your horse has. been recovered by God, or by Beelzebub? Will he ride the better or the worse for this? _

MASTER No. Yet, eh if a were. Pe sessed... JAMES. ~ What remedy: would yee apply z yastex.

‘AND. HIS MASTER. 197 MASTER. The remedy in, expectation of your being. exorcised, would ‘be ,. . would be to allow you: no. other beverage but holy water, (JAMES. I, sir, reduced to water! James seduced. to holy water !—I would rather, sir, a thousand legions of devils should remain in my body than drink a drop, holy or not holy —What! have: you _— never yet perceived that. F was subject to the ydrophobia... Hydrophobia!—-What, did James say hydrophobia ?. . No, reader, no ; I confess thaethe word is not his, But with this severity of criticism E.defy you to, read a scene of comedy or tragedy, a single acene,. hawever well executed, without o 3 sure

198 JAMES ‘THE FATALIST "surprising the author's words in the mouth of his character. James said : What, ‘sir, have you never ‘perceived that the sight of water makes me ‘mad? wee Very well, then’ in adopting’ a different phrase from his, I have been less faithful, butn more concise. ‘They again aiguinted ae — and James said.to his Master, You had arrived at that period of your amours, when, after being twice happy, ‘you were, perhaps, preparing to enjoy the same felicity a third time, MASTER. When suddenly the passage door flew ‘open. The- room was instantly filled with a crowd of people, who walked about tumultuously. I perceived light, and heard the voices of men and women speaking

“iawo wid whdsiens igo speaking coiifusedly.- The cuftains were | forcibly thrown open; arid‘] discovered the’ father, ‘the’ ‘mdothe: ‘the: aunts, ‘the cotisins, | tHiale ‘and females” anda ‘com: miséary, who’ * gravely adiesed: them’: : Getitlemen and ladies, ho* hoisé 7 5 tie offence j is flagrant; ‘the’ geiitleman j isa man’ “of hobour; ‘there! is only” one way of repairing the ‘misthief, and’ the gentleman Will prefer embtacitig i ‘it ‘himself rather: than’ be’ constrained to” ieby' the law. . .v At these ‘words, he ‘was interrupted by the: father ‘ahd ‘mother, ‘who loaded ‘tiie with

reproache’; by the aufts and thé’ ferhale cousins, * ‘who directed against Agatha! epithets the least’ tere: " monious, who, micaiwhile,: had wrapped herself up in the bed clothes? ‘I was stupified; ‘and : knew not’ what' to’ say. The’ commissaty, addressing himself to me, said: ironically $- Sir, you" are very ; o4 com

200 JAMES THE FATALIST comfortable ; but you must nevertheless. think proper to rise and dress yourself . . which I accordingly did, sisted for ‘those of the Chevalier. A table was placed, and the commissary set about drawing upa state of the roceedings. Meanwhile the mother affected to storm so mych, that she was held by four persons, to prevent her from beating her daughter ; ; and the father said to her, Softly, my dear, softly ; for indeed if you were to beat your daughter, you would not mend the Matter ; every thing ¥ will be settled for the best . . The other personages were dispersed ¥ upon chairs, i in the different attitudes of grief, indignation and resgutment. The father, scolding hig dene wife continually, said to. her, See, the gonsequences of not waching oyer the con:

AND HIS MASTER, = 201 conduct of your daughter... The mother replied : with an air so good and so virtuous, who could have believed jt of this gentleman ?... The rest kept. silence. The account of the circumstances being drawn up, it was read to me, and, as-it contained nothing but the truth, I subscribed to it, and: went down stairs with the commissary, who very obligingly asked me to step into a carriage that was at the door, from, whence I was. conducted , with: a- numerous retinue. 0, the prison of Fort-l’Evéque. JAMES. . Piva ieee et: det, Sant 2 ; : To Fort-] Eveque | to prison! gt SS epi | nee. Tpeek Cpe ee MASTER,

$02 sAMES THE FATS EST 4 ie ees Be ae a CMD ASST OBR 0 fut tad ~ To: prison} “and theit” what ati aboy minable process ° ‘ensued FPhey falked of nothing less than my espousing Mademoiselle Agatha. The parents would listeii to ii0' compromise}: ‘Inthe i ihornoe the: Chevaliervisited mela myre"He was abquaitited: with every a that had ‘happened, and took ‘gréat | pains to tell-me the most minute

trifles, saying, « that:' “Agatha -was ‘in--despait § her . parents:!.were enraged s ‘he had undergone’ the ‘most’ cfuel’‘reproaches upon ?-the « treatherotts !. acquaintance whom he had introduced to their family ; it was he who was the first cause of their misfortupe, and the dishonour ‘of their aaupkicrs the * situation of the poor people inspired his pity ; he had asked leave to speak to Agathain . private,

AND HIS MASTER; “203 private, ‘and. with the utmost difficulty obtained permission; Agatha had liked to: ‘Rave ‘plucked : “out > his “eyes; and ‘had ‘called him’ the! most: odious: nainés}! he’ had” “expected allthis; he had allowed her’ fury to’ subside, after whicki he had- ‘endeavouied to bring her to something: reasonable; - But thé’ gil said one thing;’ to: which, added: thie Chevalier, T’knew iio answer':: My fa> ther and. ‘mother have surprised me with your friend ; must I tell them, that, when in bed with him, T thought Twas in bed with you?.. .He°ant swered ; But, seriously, do” you imaz gine that my friend can marry you? -: ; ‘No, said ‘she; it’ is you, basé; dishonourable wretch, who ought ‘to be'condetined to. that alternative.—But, ’ ‘said I to the: Chevalier, it is’ entirely in your power to extricate me ftom this em~

204 JAMES THE FATALIST embgrrassment.erEow so ?---How? why py. deelaring the matter as it really js.-~ Ithreatened Agatha that I would, do so, said he; but I cannot do such a thing, It is. dgubtful whether this method would be of advantage ; and it is very ¢ertain that it would cover us with 3nfamay. Besides, -it. is. yous fault.--My fault !¥es, your faylt, for if yay had approved af the. trick that] proposed, Agatha would have been surprised .batween two men, and: the whole affair would have, eaded in a jest. However, a5 this tas nat been” the way, we must extricate ourselves from the scrape as well as we can.—-But, Chevalier, can you expkin to me-a little incident ?. Kt is, how my. clothes came to be restored, and yours replaced jn the wardrobe ? ? Upon my. soul, I have thought of it to no purpose ; it

“CAND'HIS MASTER, = 405 it is.a mystery which confounds me; this renders me a

little suspicious ‘of Agatha ; it-has oceutred to me, that she: has discovered the imposture, arid. that. ‘sonte connivanee had: subsisted: between: lier arid her parents~—Perhaps: shey saw you'come up: staits; certain” it is,: that. hardly were you. undieséed. when they sent me: back ‘my-:clothdd and demanded yours, replied the Chevas lier.—-Time will clear up this cient said: I. | As the Chevalier and: I Were: gtie ving, consoling, accusings reviling,’ and asking each other pardon, the coitmnissaty entered... ‘Fhe Chevalier tutned pale,.and abtuptl y:retingd, : : Bhis: come raissarys Wasa niakr of worth, as thére ate: some:sucly in’ the dcdiibation:\‘amd happeningito Pedd:éver apainyat home, the:account of the proceedings which he

206 JAMES THE FATALIST he had drawn up, he recollected that he had studied along with a young man of my name; it had struck him, that I might, perhaps, be the relation, or even the son of his old college acquaintanee ; and the fact was true. His first question was, Who was the person who had made his escape when he entered ?— He did not make his escape; he 1s gone out: it is my intimate friend, the Chevalier de Saint-Ouin.---Your friend ! You have, indeed, got there a pretty friend! Do you know, sir, that it was he himself who came and gave me notice? He was accompanied by the father and another relation—He !— He himself.—aAre you very sure of that point ?>—Perfectly sure ; but what name did you give him '—The Chevalier de St. Ouin.—Oh! the Chevalier de St. Ouin; just so. And do you know what

AND HIS MASTER. 207 what your friend, your intimate friend, the Chevalier de St. Ouin, , is? A sharper ! a man notorious by a hundred knavish tricks! The police only allow such £ men to g0 at large, on account of the ‘intelligence they sometimes give. They are rogues, and also informers upon rogues; and it would seem | that they are more useful for., the mischiefs, they. prevent or reveal, than hurtful i by; that. which they perform... ‘I told the commissary my ‘melancholy adventure, as. it had really happened. He did not view it.in a very favourable light ; for every

circumstance which tended to acquit me, could neither be alledged nor _proved in a court of justicé. “He, nevertheless, undertook to call ‘before hin. the. father and mother, to ‘stop the daughter’ s “mouth, to give 3 » the ee

2608 JAMES THE FATALIST the magistrate proper information, and to neglect nothing which could serve for my justification ; at the samé time apprising me, that if thesé people wére well advised, authority coiild do very little in the businés.— But, Mr. Comrhissdry saifd f, shail ¥ be compeHed to marry ?—=-Marry'! tha Would be too hard, and thérefore' I eis tertaiti little appreheiison' of that, quoth he, yet some compensation must be given; and in this case’ it will be considerable .. « But, Jamies, F ‘thik fou havé something to say to’nle.’ JAMES: ¥es, I wished to’ fell fou, thaf you Weré Moré wiifoitunate than J who paid, and yet never wad it bed ‘with, the girl, As'to' what follows, I'believe 1 should 2 - have

AND HIS MASTER, 209 have heard your history quite through, if Agatha had proved with child. MASTER. Stick by your conjecture, for the commissary told me some time after my confinement that she had come before him and made her declaration of pregnancy. JAMES, So, so, you are father of achild. .. MASTER. To whom I have discharged every duty. JAMES, But whom you never begot. MASTER, Neither the protection of the magistrates nor all the exertions of the comimissary, could prevent this affair from following the regular course of justice; VOL, Il. P but

210 JAMES THE FATALIST | but, as the character of the daughter and her parents was so bad, I got off from marrying from this consideration. I was condemned to pay a considerable fine, to pay the lying in expences, and to provide for the maintenance and education of a child produced by the exertions of my friend the Chevalier de St. Ouin, who was his exaét picture in miniature. He was a thumping boy, of whom Mademoiselle Agatha was safely delivered between the seventh and eighth month; he was provided * with a good nurse, whom I have paid every month

to this moment. JAMES. Of what age, sir, may your son be? MASTER He will soon be ten years old. I have him all this time in the country, where 2 the

SGRNDOHIS MASTER... 211 thé:'school.: mastér -of the .place. has taught!him :to:read;..write; and cast.aécounts. . It:is:not:far: froth the! place of our destinatidn;and. I> avail ‘myself: :of this:: cincumstance ‘to’ pay! the’ people what I owe them, to take away-the'boy; and put him to business ee eho eer ba sates -damés.and his Master slepté énce more ypen egies eoued were, too:-neat ee resume-;the: uiore: of his a amourss besides thativhis sore ‘throat was: far from, Deing well: Next: day they: ary rived «ue -—-Where?—-Upon my honeur, L-cannot tell.—-And what was their business.at the place.to which they were going ?—Any thing you pleasé:» Do you: imagine. that James and his Master told their business to every body ?-—Whatever it was it did not reae) quire

212 JAMES THE FATALIST quire--them “to stay above a fortnight: Whether it. terminated well or ill, isa point. which I cannot: decide. James's sore ‘throat ‘was removed by two remedies of which he was not fond, pegunen and repose. One one ee the Master said to his servant: James, bridle and saddle the horses, and fill your flask; we met go to the -place I: told:you of ... . . whicli was instantly executed.' i They were now pushing on to the place where, for ten years, the Chevalier de’ St; Ouin’s child had been-maintained at ‘the expence of James's.Master. . At some distance from the lodging they had left, the Master addréssed:-Jaimes in the following words: James, what do you say of my amours? JAMES.

AND HIS MASTER. : Wik f eh eee, “J,ALM EB 8. i oa ~ : I say a ne are strange things dies creed on high. Here is a child begotten, God knows how? Who knows the part which this,Jittle bastard will act: in the world? Who knows whether he is born for the happiness or for-the..destruction of an.empire?MASTER. I answer for him; he is not born for either. I will make hima good turner or a good watch-maker.. He will marry, he will beget children, who, to perpetuity, will turn chair backs in

this world. JAMES, Yes, if this be decreed on high. But what is there to hinder him ‘issuing forth a Cromwell from the shop of a turner? P 3 Did

414 JAMES THE FATADIST Did not he, who brought his king to the scaffold, come’out ofa brewer’s shop, and do not we say at thisday..... MASTER, Leave this:subject. “You are now in good health, you are acquainted with my-amours; in conscience you cannot refuse to resume the history of yours, JAMES... Every thing opposes it. In the first place, the little way we now have to travel; secondly, our. having forgot where I was; thirdly, the devil of a presentiment I have, that . . . that this-history is never to be finished ; that the recital will produce some mischief, and that no sooner shall I have resumed it than it will be interrupted by some; cattrophe, fortunate or unfortunate, MASTER

AND HIS MASTER. 215 MASTRR. If it is fortunate, so much the better! JAMES, Agreed; but I have it here... that it will be unfortunate. © MASTER. Unfortunate ! be it ; but whether you speak or be silent, will the event fail to happen on: that account ? JAMES, Who knows that ? MASTER. You came into the world two or three ages too late. pA JAMES.

216 JAMES THE FATALIST JAME'S.: No, sir, I came into it precisely at the proper time, like every other person, MASTER. - . You would have proved a great augur. JAMES, - Ido not know exa¢tly what an augur is, nor am J anxious to know. MASTER. It is one of the important chapters in your treatise of divination. JAMES, Yes, but it is so long since it was written, that I do not recolle& a word of it. Hold, sir, there is something that knows

AND HIS MASTER, 217 knows more than all the augurs, soothsaying geese, and sacred chickens of the republic, and that is the flask. Let us examine the flask... James took the flask and consulted it at great length. The Master pulled out his watch and his snuff box, looked what o'clock it was, took a pinch of snuff, and James said; Methinks, at present, that I see destiny less black. Tell me where I was,

MASTER, In the castle of Desglands, your knee. a little better, and Denise, charged by her mother, to attend you. JAMES. Denise was very obedient. The wound on my knee was almost closed, I had

218 JAMES THE FATALIST had even been able to dance in the circle the night we were assembled by the child. Nevertheless, I occasionally suffered incredible pain. It struck the surgeon of the castle, who knew a little more about these matters than his brother of the profession by whom I was first attended, that these pains which so obstinately returned, could only be occasioned by some extraneous matter - which had continued in the flesh after the ball was extraéted. In consequeitce of this idea he came into my room one morning early; he caused a table to be placed by my bed side, and, when my ~ curtains were drawn, I saw the table covered with incision knives, Denise seated by my pillow weeping salt tears; her mother standing with her arms across and very melancholy ; the surgeon without his coat, the sleeves of his shirt . tucked

AND HIS MASTER. 219 tucked up, and:an incision knife in his right hand. MASTER. You terrify me. JAMES. I was frightened too. Friend, says the surgeon to me, are you tired of the sufferings you endure ?—+-Very much so. —Do you wish to put an end to them and to preserve your limb ?—Certainly. —Put it gut of bed then and allow me to do with it as I please . . —-I present my leg. The surgeon takes the handle of his knife in his:teeth, introduces my leg under his left arm, there fixes it fast, resumes his knife, introduces the point at the orifice of my wound, and makes alarge and deep incision. I never moved a feature, but Jane turned away

220 JAMES THE FATALIST away. her head, and Denise uttered a shriek and was taken ill .... Here James paused in his recital, and again paid his addresses to the flask. These addresses were the more frequent as the distances were short; or, as mathematicians say, in the inverse:ratio of the distances. He was so accurate. in his measures, that though full when he set out, it was just empty upon his arrival.

Indeed, your land surveyors and commissioners of the roads, might have made an excellent Odometer of it, for at every consultation James made he always found it sufficiently true. On this occasion, it was employed to recover Denise from her swoon, and to recruit himself from the pain occasioned by the incision which the surgeon had made ‘in <3 hts

AKD HIS MASTER, 221 his knee. Denise recovered, and himself. recruited: he" continued. Sao 3 ap ae 2 bank JAMES. This enormous incision laid open the bottom of the wound, from which the surgeon pulled” out, ‘With his pincers, a very small piece: of cloth of part of my breeches which, i remaining in, had caiused the pain I endured, and prevented the complete healing of the sore, After this operation my situation grew better anid’better, thanks to the care of Denise ; there was no more pain,no more fever ; iI regained my appetite, sleep and strength. Denise dréssed me'‘with infinite exactnéss “and” ‘délicacy. ‘Tt was a pleasure to see’ the circumspection and the addiess with which she took off my dressings, the fear she felt of giving me'the smallest pain; the manner in which ‘she bathed

922 JAMES THE FATALIST bathed my wound. I was seated uport the side of the bed; she had one. knee on the ground, my Jeg was laid upon her thigh which I sometimes pressed a little. I had one hand over her shoulder,. and T saw her perform her business, with a feeling of tenderness, which I believe she shared. When the dressing was finished I took hdld of her hands, and thanked her. I knew not what to Say 3 I did not know how to testify to her my gratitude, she was standing with downcast eyes and listened to me without say ing a word. There never passed a single pedlar bythe castle, from whom I did not buy something ; sometimes,a handkerchief ; sometimes a few:yards of calicoe, or muslin ; a gold cross ; cottan stockings ; a ring; a granate necklace; When my little purchase was made, my embarrassment was to offer, hers to aecept

AND HIS MASTER. 223 cept'the present. First of all I shewed it to her then; if she

liked it, [would say, Denise, it is for you that 1 bought it....If she accepted my hand trembled while I presented it, and hers while she received it. One day, not knowing any longer what to give her, I bought some garters. They were of silk, embroidered with white, red, and blue, with a device. In the morning, before she came, I placed them on the back of a chair at the side of my bed. As soon as Denise perceived them, she said: Oh! what pretty garters !|~They are for my sweetheart, replied 1—You have then a sweetheart, Mr. James ?— Assuredly, did I never tell you..... very pretty too—And you love her well? . .. Most dearly.—And she loves you equally >—I do not know that. These garters are for her, and she has promised,

224 JAMES THE FATALIST promised me a favour, which I belteve will make me.mad if she grants it— And what is that favour?—It is, that of these two garters, I am to tie on ene with my own hands... ..—Denise blushed, mistook the aim of my discourse, believed the garters were intended for another; became melancholy, committed one blunder after another, looked about for every thing necessary for my dressing, had it under her eyes but could not find it; overturned the wine she had warmed, approached my bed to dress me, took my leg with a trembling hand, untied my bandages quite wrong, and when thc wound was to be fomented, she had forgot every article that was requisite; she went to seek for them, she dressed me, and, as she did it, I perceived that she ceried.—Denise, said I, I think you are crying,

AND HIS MASTER; 425. crying, ‘what is the matter with-you?— Nothing.—Has any body injured yoti? —Yes.—Who is the villain who has done it?—It is you—I?—Yes,—And how has that happened? 1 ; .- Instead of answering me, she turned her eyes to the garters.—Whiat then! said I, is it this that has made you ‘cry?—Yes.— Hah! Denise, do. not weep, it :is for you that I bought them.

726 JAMES THE FATALIST was it fixed when Jane, her mother, entered. MASTER. What a provoking visit this ! JAMES, Perhaps yes, perhaps no. Instead of observing our confusion, she looked.only at the garter which her daughter held in

her hand. What a pretty garter, said ahe ; but where is the other?—On my leg, replied Denise ; he told me he had bought them for his sweetheart, and I judged that it was for me. Is it not just, mamma, that. since I have put on one I ought to keep the other ?—Ah? Mr. James, Denise is right, one: garter is of no use without the other, and you would not take back that she has got!— Why not? said 1—Because Denise -- would

~ AND His: MASTER, . 227 Would not like°it,- Ao’ more would I, But let us accommodate the matter, I will fasten the other in your presence. —No, no, tliat is impossible —She must then restote me both —-That cannot be neither.— But James and his Master are now at the entrance of the village where they were going to see the child and the foster parents of the Chevalier de Saint Ouin’s child. James was silent; his Master said to him: Let us dismount, and here make a pause.—Why? —Because, according to all appearance, you are approaching very near the conclusion of your amours.—Not quite so. —When a man atrives at the knee, he has not. far to go--Ah Master, said James, Denise had a longer thigh than most .. Let us dismount, however. a2 They

228 JAMES THE FATALIST ~ They dismount, James first, and presented himself, with agility, at his Master’s boot. No sooner had the Master put his foot upon the stirrup than the straps gave away, which occasioned him to fall backwards, and would certainly have thrown him violently on the ground, if his valet had not received him in his arms. . ‘ MASTER _ - The deuce, James, is it thus you attend to my safety? How near was I breaking my ribs and my arms, and cutting my head ; nay, perhaps being, kiloe ? AMES — Well, and where would have been the great harm of that? MASTER. ‘What do you say, rascal ? Stop, stop, T will teach you to speak... And

“AND HI6“MASTER,.© 229° ” And here: thesMaster, iafter. twisting: his whip twice round his fist, fel! to: pursuing James, whilst .James turned round the

horse-with loud bursts. .of laughter. His Master cursed and: SWOIes, foamed with rage, wheeled round the horse, pouring out against James a, torrent of. invectives, and. this chace. continued till both overrun with perspiration and exhausted with. fatigue, stopped one on each side- of. the horse, James panting and continuing to laugh, his Master panting and darting at him the most furious giances. They were beginning to recover their breath, when James said to his Master : sir, my Master, will you now agree ? we, Ty a Agree to' what, dog, knave, ruffian, except'that you are the most wicked of a3 servants,

230 JAMES THE FATALIST servants, and J the mést vnfortunate of masters ? JAMES. Is it not evidently demonstrated that we act the greatest part of the time we live without the interposition of our will? There, put your hand on your breast ; in all you have said or done for half an hour, was your will any way employed? Have you not beech my puppet, and might you not have continued for a month to be my punchinello, had I proposed it?" MASTER. "What ! it was only play, then , JAMES, Nothing more, indeed, sir. MASTBR.

AND AIS. MASTBR. $31 MASTER, And' you expeted the breaking: of the straps? FAMES. "Certiinly, for I had attanged it. MASTER So it was the wire which you id to my | head to guide me to Diagk fay: ? JAMES. Admirably guessed | I, rete att * ples ~MASTER. And was your impertinent reply premeditated ! > JAMES. 7° premeditated. 1ooF eA MASTER.

232 JAMES THE FATALIST MASTER. - ¥eu are a dangerous ragamuffiin, JAMES. Say rather that I am.a subtle reasoner, thanks to my captain, who one day procured himself the same pastime at my expence, , MASTER. But suppose I had been wounded ? ? JAMES, Tt was decreed of "high, and in 1 my foresight, that this would not happen, MASTER.' | Come, let us sit down, we need Tepose. ; They

AND HIS MASTER. 233 'They sat down, James saying, Plagne take the fool! . MASTER, It is yourself, you mean ? JAMES, Yes, myself, for not having reserved a

single glass 3 in the flask. ; MASTER, Feel no regret upon the occasion, for I should have drank 1 ay as I am dying of thirst, | oe F = JAMES, a | - Plague take the fool, still say I, for not having reserved two ! H "The. Master ‘cede: bia to beguile . their weariness and thirst, by continuing

434 JAMES THE FATALIST continuing his recital. James refused ; - his Master looked sulky, and James allowed himself to seem sulky also. At Jast, with a protest against the misfortunes which might ensue resuming the history of his amours, he said One holiday, when the lord of the castle was at the chace .., After these words he stopped short, “aaa said’: Edo not know. It is impossible for me to advance ; it seems that I haye again the hand of destiny at my ‘throat; and that I feel’ it squeezing me; for God's sake, sir, allow me to hold my tongue.. Well, then, hold your tongue, and ue and ask ‘at the first cottage,’ wipes Ue foster father of the’ child lives: .~ 2 It wasat the farthest house ; they proceeded to it, ¢ach' ‘of them holding his ‘horse-by the | bridle: ~At this‘ moment tle doot opened

AND HIS MASTER, 435° opened and aman appeared. The -Master uttered a cry and clapping-his hand: on his sword, the man in question did the same. The two horses took fright at the clash of arms, that of James broke his bridle and escaped, and, at the same instant, the person, with whom James's Master fought, was laid dead on the spot. The peasants of the village assembled. James’s Master . instantly ~ leaped into the saddle, and flew full speed. James was seized, his hands tied behind his back, and taken before the justice of the peace, who_ committed him to prison.: The man who was killed was the Chevalier de Saint, Onin, whom chance had conducted, with Agat! aay precisely that, very. day. to the house of the jnurse; of their child. | Agatha tore her hair on the. dead. ‘body of her lover. James! s “Master was already out

236 JAMES THE FATALIST out of sight. James, as he went from. the house. of the justice to prison, -frequentiy said to himself; It does not, not signify, this would have

happened. in spite of all our care, for certainly it. was decreed'on high... : And heré I stop, because I have told you ail T know of these personages.— And the amours of James? James said 3a hundred times that it was decreed on high that he should never finish the history of his amours, and I see 'that' James was right. I see, reader, that you are vexed at this circumstance; heyday, resume his recital where he left it and continue it as you please, or ra_ther pay a visit to Mademoiselle' Agatha, enquire. the name of. the: village where James is imprisoned.' Procure an interview with James, e examine him, he will not need much importuning to'give you

'AND HIS:MASTER, 237 you 'satisfaction, This will relieve his spirits: According to some documents which I have good reason to hold suspicious, [could supply: what is wanting. But to what purpose ? We: can only be interested in what we believe to be true. At thé same time, as it would be rash to'pronounce. without a mature' exathination upon the conversations of James the Fatalist and bis Master, the most important work that has appeared since ° the Pantagruel of Master Francis RabeJais, and the Life and Adventures of 'Compere: Mathieu, I shall again peruse these memoirs with all the impartiality of which I am capable, 'and, within eight days, inform you of my definitive judgment, with reservation of a power to retraét whenever a person, more intelligent than myself, shall prove that I have been mistaken, 3 The

2338 JAMES THE FATALIST The editor adds: The eight days have expired. I have examined the me: moirs; out of three paragraphs which I found containing more thai the mas nuscript of which I am.in possession, the first and the last appear to me to be ofiginal, and the middle ors evidently to be interpolated. The following is the first, which supposes a gap in the conversation ef James and his Master. One holiday, when the lord of the castle was at the chace, and the rest of his domestics had gone to mass at the parish church, which was a full quarter of a league distant, Jamies had got up and Denise was seated by his side. They were silent, they had the appearance of pouting to each other, and they did so in reality. James had put every method

AND HIs MASTER..: 2389 method in pta@tice to prevail upon Denise to make him happy, and Denise had remained firm. After this long silence, James, weeping bitterly, said to her in a harsh and angry tone: It is because you do not love me.. . Denise, provoked, rose, laid hold of his arm, led him hastily to the bed side, sat down, and said: - Very well, Mr. James, I do not love you, then? Very well, Mr. James, do what ever you please with the wretched Denise .... And saying these words she burst into tears and was almost suffocated with sighs... Tell me, reader, what you wonld have done in James's place?.. Nothing. .Very well! it is precisely what he did. He led Denise back to her chair, threw himself at her feet, wiped the tears which streamed. from her eyes, kissed her

$40 JAMES THE FATALIS? her hands, consoled and cheeréd hei, believed that he was tenderly beloved; and threw himself in full confidence upon her tenderness, till the moment when she should be pleased to reward his. Denise was very sensibly touched by this proceeding. Te will be objected perhaps, that James, at the feet of Denise, could not very readily wipe her eyes... . unless the chair was very low. The manuscript does not mention, but this is to be supposed. Next follows the second paragraph, copied from the life of Tristram Shandy, “unless the conversation of James the Fatalist and his Master be anterior to that work, and parson Sterne be the plagiary which I am induced to disbelieve

AND’ HIS MASTER. . 241 lievé froma very’ particular esteem which I entertain for Mr. Sterne, whom I distingaish from the greater part of the literary mien of his country; with whom it is a very frequent practice to steal from us and then to abuse us. Another time, it was in the morning, Denise came to dress James. Every soul.in the castle was asleep. Denise, trembling, approached; when she reached James’s door she stopped, doubtful whether to.enter or retire. Trembling sheentered,and remained a considerable _ time at James’s bed side, without daring to open the curtains. She gently drew them aside, and,- trembling, she bid James good morning... Trembling she enquired after his night’s rest and. his health. James told

her that he had not closed.his eyes, that he had suffered. -VOL.II = RR and

242 JAMES THE FATALIST and still suffered froma cruel itching in his knee. Denise offered to sooth it. She took a piece of flannel, James put his leg out of bed, and Denise began rubbing it with her flannel below the sore, at first with one finger, then with two, with three, with four, then with her whole hand. James gazed upon her as she did it, and was intoxicated with love. Then Denise rubbed upon the sore itself with the flannel, the scar of which was still inflamed, first with ene finger, then with two, with three, with four, with her whole hand. But it was not enough to have allayed the itching below the knee, upon the knee, it was necessary to allay it also above the knee, where-it only raged with greater keenness. Denise applied het flannel above the knee and fell a rubbing there very stoutly, first ‘with one finger,

‘AND HIS MASTER. 243 finger, then with two, with three, with four, with her whole hand. The passion of James, who had never ceased to gaze upon her, rose to such a pitch, that no longer able to resist, he seized the hand of Denise and kissed it... . and kissed it. ... But the circumstance that leaves no doubt of the plagiarism, is what follows: The plagiary adds: If you are not satisfied with what I disclose to you of James’s amours, reader, do something better, you have my leave. In whatever way you proceed I am sure you will end as I do.—You are mistaken, egregious calumniator, I will not end as you do. Denise was discreet-—And who says the contrary? James seized her hand and kissed it, ay, her hand. It is you who have your mind corrupted and R 2 underf

244 JAMES THE FATALIST understand what was nevér meant to be conveyed.—Heyday then! he only kissed her hand ?—Certainly, James had too much sense to abuse her whom he intended to make his wife and to lay the foundation of a distrust which might have poisoned the happiness of the rest of his life——But it is said in the preceding paragraph, that James had put every method in practice to prevail upon Denise to make him happy.—And this it would seem,

because he did not intend to make her his wife. The third paragraph, discovers James, our poor Fatalist, with irons on his feet and hands, stretched upon straw, at the extremity of a dark dungeon, mustering up all he had retained of his captain’s . principles of philosophy, and almest brought to believe, that, perhaps, he ~ would

AND HIS MASTER. 245 would one'day regret this damp, noisome, gloomy abode, where he was fed upon black bread and water, and where he was forced to defend his feet and hands against the attacks of the. rats and mice. We are told, that in the middle of his meditations, the doors. of his prison and of his dungeon are’ burst open; that he is set at liberty along with a dozen robbers, and that he is enlisted in the gang of Mandrin*, ‘Meanwhile the officers of justice, who were in pursuit of his Master, had overtaken, seized, and committed him to another prison. ‘He was liberated through the good offices of the commissary, ‘who had so effectually served him in his first adventure, and was living retired two * A notorious French robber and houéebreaker. 3 ' or

246 JAMES THE PATALIST or three months after in the castle of ‘Desglands, when chance restored: to him a sérvant almost as essential to his happiness as his watch and his snuff-box. He never took a single pinch of snuff, he. never once looked what o'clock it was, without exclaiming, with a sigh, what is become of you, my poor James ? ..- One night, the castle of Desglands was attacked by the Mandrins ; James recognized the abode of his benefactor and of his mistress. He interceded and secured the castle from pillage. We next read the pathetie detail of the unexpected interview of James, his Master, Desglands, Denise and Jean.—It is you, my friend!—It is you, my dear Master !—How came you among these people >And how happens it that I have met you here ?—It is you, De“ nise?

AND HIS MASTER, 247 nise?——Tt'is you, Mr. James ?—-Many a teat have you made.me shed! . . . Desglands meanwhile cried: Bane. glasses and ‘wine, it is he who has saved the lives of us all... Some days after the old warden of the castle died,

James obtained the place, and married Denise; with whom he employed himself in raising up disciples ‘to Zeno and Spinosa, beloved by Desglands, cherished by his Master, and adored by his wife; for so it was decreed on high. Some would have persuaded me, that his Master and Desglands fell in love with his wife. I know not how this may be, but certain I am that every night he would say to himself; If it is decreed on high that you areto be a cuckold, James, do what you may you shall be one; if it is decreed on high, however,

448 JAMES THE FATALIST, ETC. however, that you are not-to:be a cus kold; do what they please you shall not. be one. ‘Sleep then, my friend. . . and; with: these ene he fell ania He t ' HR END. ~

James the Fatalist and His Master